

# Westminster Larger Catechism

*With proof texts adopted by the 68th General Assembly of the Orthodox Presbyterian Church*

## Man and God

### Q. 1. What is the chief and highest end of man?

*A. Man's chief and highest end is to glorify God, [1] and fully to enjoy him forever. [2]*

[1] Romans 11:36. For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen. Corinthians 6:20. For you are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's. 1 Corinthians 10:31. Whether therefore you eat, or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God. Psalm 86:9, 12. All nations whom you have made shall come and worship before you, O Lord; and shall glorify your name.... I will praise you, O Lord my God, with all my heart: and I will glorify your name for evermore.

[2] Psalm 73:24-28. You shall guide me with your counsel, and afterward receive me to glory. Whom have I in heaven but thee? and there is none upon earth that I desire beside thee. My flesh and my heart faileth: but God is the strength of my heart, and my portion for ever. For, lo, they that are far from you shall perish: you have destroyed all them that go a whoring from thee. But it is good for me to draw near to God: I have put my trust in the Lord GOD, that I may declare all your works. John 17:21-23. That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in you, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that you have sent me. And the glory which you gave me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: I in them, and you in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that you have sent me, and have loved them, as you have loved me. Psalm 16:5-11. The LORD is the portion of my inheritance and of my cup: you maintain my lot. The lines are fallen unto me in pleasant places; yea, I have a goodly heritage. I will bless the LORD, who has given me counsel: my reins also instruct me in the night seasons. I have set the LORD always before me: because he is at my right hand, I shall not be moved. Therefore my heart is glad, and my glory rejoices: my flesh also shall rest in hope. For you will not leave my soul in hell; neither will you suffer your Holy One to see corruption. You will show me the path of life: in your presence is fulness of joy; at your right hand there are pleasures for evermore. Revelation 21:3-4. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

### Q. 2. How do I know that there is a God?

*A. The very light of nature in man, and the works of God, declare plainly that there is a God;[3] but only his word and Spirit sufficiently and effectually reveal him to men for their salvation.[4]*

[3] Romans 1:19-20. Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God has showed it to them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse. Acts 17:28. For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. See Psalm 19:1-3.

[4] 1 Corinthians 2:9-10. But as it is written, Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God has prepared for them that love him. But God has revealed them to us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God. 1 Corinthians 1:20-21. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God

the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. 2 Timothy 3:15-17. And that from a child you have known the holy scriptures, which are able to make you wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. See Isaiah 59:21.

## Scripture

### Q. 3. What is the Word of God?

A. *The holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments are the Word of God,[5] the only rule of faith and obedience.[6]*

[5] 2 Timothy 3:16. All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness. 2 Peter 1:19-21. We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto you do well that you take heed, as unto a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. 2 Peter 3:2, 15-16. That you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Savior.... And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him has written unto you; As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction. Matthew 19:4-5. And he answered and said unto them, Have you not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? With Genesis 2:24. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

[6] Deuteronomy 4:2. you shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall you diminish ought from it, that you may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you. Ephesians 2:20. And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone. Revelation 22:18-19. For I testify unto every man that hearsthe words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book. Isaiah 8:20. To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them. Luke 16:29, 31. Abraham says unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.... And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. Galatians 1:8-9. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that you have received, let him be accursed. 2 Timothy 3:15-16. And that from a child you have known the holy scriptures, which are able to make you wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.

### Q. 4. How do I know that the Scriptures are the Word of God?

A. *The Scriptures manifest themselves to be the Word of God, by their majesty[7] and purity;[8] by the consent of all the parts,[9] and the scope of the whole, which is to give all glory to God;[10]*

*by their light and power to convince and convert sinners, to comfort and build up believers unto salvation:[11] but the Spirit of God bearing witness by and with the Scriptures in the heart of man, is alone able fully to persuade it that they are the very word of God.[12]*

[7] Hosea 8:12. I have written to him the great things of my law, but they were counted as a strange thing. 1 Corinthians 2:6-7, 13. Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought: But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory:... Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teaches, but which the Holy Ghost teaches; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. Psalm 2 119:18, 129. Open you my eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of your law.... your testimonies are wonderful: therefore does my soul keep them.

[8] Psalm 12:6. The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Psalm 119:140. your word is very pure: therefore your servant loves it.

[9] Luke 24:27. And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. Acts 10:43. To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believes in him shall receive remission of sins. Acts 26:22. Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come.

[10] Romans 3:19, 27. Now we know that what things soever the law says, it says to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.... Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. Romans 16:25-27. Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith: To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen. See 2 Corinthians 3:6-11.

[11] Acts 18:28. For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, showing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ. Hebrews 4:12. For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. James 1:18. Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures. Psalm 19:7-9. The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple. The statutes of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes. The fear of the LORD is clean, enduring for ever: the judgments of the LORD are true and righteous altogether. Romans 15:4. For whatever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope. Acts 20:32. And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

[12] John 16:13-14. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall show it unto you. See 1 John 2:20, 27. John 20:31.

#### **Q. 5. What do the Scriptures principally teach?**

A. *The Scriptures principally teach, what man is to believe concerning God,[13] and what duty God requires of man.[14]*

[13] Genesis 1:1. In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. Exodus 34:5-7. And the LORD descended in the cloud, and stood with him there, and proclaimed the name of the LORD. And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth generation. Psalm 48:1. Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised in the city of our God, in the mountain of his holiness. John 20:31. But these are written, that you might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing you might have life through his name. See 2 Timothy 3:15.

[14] Deuteronomy 10:12-13. And now, Israel, what does the LORD your God require of you, but to fear the LORD your God, to walk in all his ways, and to love him, and to serve the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul, To keep the commandments of the LORD, and his statutes, which I command you this day for your good? 2 Timothy 3:15-17. And that from a child you have known the holy scriptures, which are able to make you wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works. Acts 16:30-31. And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you shall be saved, and your house.

#### **Q. 6. What do the Scriptures make known of God?**

*A. The Scriptures make known what God is,[15] the persons in the Godhead,[16] his decrees,[17] and the execution of his decrees.[18]*

[15] John 4:24. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. Exodus 34:6-7. And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth generation. Isaiah 40:18, 21-23, 25, 28. To whom then will you liken God? or what likeness will you compare unto him?...Have you not known? have you not heard? has it not been told you from the beginning? have you not understood from the foundations of the earth? It is he that sits upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants of it are as grasshoppers; that stretches out the heavens as a curtain, and spreades them out as a tent to dwell in: That brings the princes to nothing; he makes the judges of the earth as vanity.... To whom then will you liken me, or shall I be equal? says the Holy One.... Have you not known? have you not heard, that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, faints not, neither is weary? there is no searching of his understanding. Hebrews 11:6. But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that comes to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

[16] Matthew 3:16-17. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Deuteronomy 6:4-6. Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is one LORD: And you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your might. And these words, which I command you this day, shall be in your heart. Compared with 1 Corinthians 8:4, 6. As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one. But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him. See Matthew 28:19-20; 2 Corinthians 13:14.

[17] Acts 15:14-15, 18. Simeon has declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name. And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written.... Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world. Isaiah 46:9-10. Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me, Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure.

[18] Acts 4:27-28. For of a truth against your holy child Jesus, whom you have anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together, For to do whatever your hand and your counsel determined before to be done.

## God

### Q. 7. What is God?

A. God is a Spirit,[19] in and of himself infinite in being,[20] glory,[21] blessedness,[22] and perfection;[23] all-sufficient,[24] eternal,[25] unchangeable,[26] incomprehensible,[27] every where present,[28] almighty,[29] knowing all things,[30] most wise,[31] most holy,[32] most just,[33] most merciful and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodness and truth.[34]

[19] John 4:24. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

[20] Exodus 3:14. And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shall you say unto the children of Israel, I AM has sent me unto you. Job 11:7-9. Can you by searching find out God? can you find out the Almighty unto perfection? It is as high as heaven; what can you do? deeper than hell; what can you know? The measure of it is longer than the earth, and broader than the sea. Psalm 145:3. Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised; and his greatness is unsearchable. Psalm 147:5. Great is our Lord, and of great power: his understanding is infinite.

[21] Acts 7:2. And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken; The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran.

[22] 1 Timothy 6:15. Which in his times he shall show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords.

[23] Matthew 5:48. Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

[24] Exodus 3:14. And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shall you say unto the children of Israel, I AM has sent me unto you. Genesis 17:1. And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be you perfect. Romans 11:35-36. Or who has first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again? For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

[25] Psalm 90:2. Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever you hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, you art God. Deuteronomy 33:27. The eternal God is your refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms: and he shall thrust out the enemy from before thee; and shall say, Destroy them.

[26] Malachi 3:6. For I am the LORD, I change not; therefore you sons of Jacob are not consumed.

[27] 1 Kings 8:27. But will God indeed dwell on the earth? behold, the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee; how much less this house that I have builded? Psalm 145:3. Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised; and his greatness is unsearchable. See Romans 11:34.

[28] Psalm 139:1-13. O LORD, you have searched me, and known me. You know my downsitting and my uprising, you understandest my thought afar off. You compassest my path and my lying down, and art acquainted with all my ways. For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O LORD, you know it altogether. You have beset me behind and before, and laid your hand upon me. Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain unto it. Whither shall I go from your spirit? or whither shall I flee from your presence? If I ascend up into heaven, you art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, you art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; Even there shall your hand lead me, and your right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hides not from thee; but the night shines as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee. For you have possessed my reins: you have covered me in my mother's womb.

[29] Revelation 4:8. And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come. Genesis 17:1. And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be you perfect. Matthew 19:26. But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.

[30] Hebrews 4:13. Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do. See Psalm 147:5.

[31] Romans 11:33-34. O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out! For who has known the mind of the Lord? or who has been his counsellor? Romans 16:27. To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

[32] 1 Peter 1:15-16. But as he which has called you is holy, so be you holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, Be you holy; for I am holy. Revelation 15:4. Who shall not fear you, O Lord, and glorify your name? for you only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee; for your judgments are made manifest. Isaiah 6:3. And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory.

[33] Deuteronomy 32:4. He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he. Romans 3:5, 26. But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who takes vengeance? (I speak as a man) ...To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believes in Jesus.

[34] Exodus 34:6. And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth. Psalm 117:2. For his merciful kindness is great toward us: and the truth of the LORD endures for ever. Praise you the LORD. Deuteronomy 32:4. He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.

## **Q. 8. Is there more than one God?**

*A. There is only one, [35] the living and true God. [36]*

[35] Deuteronomy 6:4. Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is one LORD. 1 Corinthians 8:4, 6. As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.... But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him. Isaiah 45:21-22. Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them

take counsel together: who has declared this from ancient time? who has told it from that time? have not I the LORD? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Savior; there is none beside me. Look unto me, and be you saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else. Isaiah 44:6. Thus says the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God.

[36] Jeremiah 10:10. But the LORD is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting king: at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation. John 17:3. And this is life eternal, that they might know you the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent. 1 Thessalonians 1:9. For they themselves show of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God. I John 5:20. And we know that the Son of God is come, and has given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life.

#### **Q. 9. How many persons are there in the Godhead?**

*A. There are three persons in the Godhead: the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost;[37] and these three are one true, eternal God, the same in substance, equal in power and glory, but distinguished by their personal properties.[38]*

[37] Matthew 3:16-17. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Matthew 28:19. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. 2 Corinthians 13:14. The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

[38] John 1:1. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. See also Genesis 1:1-3; John 17:5. And now, O Father, glorify you me with your own self with the glory which I had with you before the world was. John 10:30. I and my Father are one. Psalm 45:6. your throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of your kingdom is a right sceptre. See also Hebrews 1:8-9. Acts 5:3-4. But Peter said, Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? Whiles it remained, was it not your own? and after it was sold, was it not in your own power? why have you conceived this thing in your heart? you have not lied unto men, but unto God. Romans 9:5. Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen. Colossians 2:9. For in him dwells all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.

#### **Q. 10. What are the personal properties of the three persons in the Godhead?**

*A. It is a property of the Father to beget the Son,[39] and of the Son to be begotten of the Father,[40] and of the Holy Ghost to proceed from the Father and the Son from all eternity.[41]*

[39] Hebrews 1:5-6, 8. For unto which of the angels said he at any time, You art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? And again, when he brings in the firstbegotten into the world, he says, And let all the angels of God worship him.... But unto the Son he says, your throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of your kingdom.

[40] John 1:14, 18. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.... No man has seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he has declared him.

[41] John 15:26. But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceeds from the Father, he shall testify of me. Galatians 4:6. And

because you are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

**Q. 11. How can it be that the Son and the Holy Ghost are God, equal with the Father?**

*A. The Scriptures manifest that the Son and the Holy Ghost are God, equal with the Father, ascribing to them names,[42] attributes,[43] works,[44] and worship,[45] that are proper to God only.*

[42] Isaiah 6:3, 5, 8. And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory.... Then said I, Woe is me! for I am undone; because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for my eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts.... Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me. John 12:41. These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spoke of him. Acts 28:25. And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spoke the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers. 1 John 5:20. And we know that the Son of God is come, and has given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. Acts 5:3-4. But Peter said, Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? Whiles it remained, was it not your own? And after it was sold, was it not in your own power? why have you conceived this thing in your heart? You have not lied unto men, but unto God.

[43] John 1:1. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. Isaiah 9:6. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. John 2:24-25. But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men, And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man. 1 Corinthians 2:10-11. But God has revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God. For what man knows the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of God knows no man, but the Spirit of God.

[44] Colossians 1:16. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him. Genesis 1:2. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

[45] Matthew 28:19. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. 2 Corinthians 13:14. The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

**Q. 12. What are the decrees of God?**

*A. God's decrees are the wise, free, and holy acts of the counsel of his will,[46] whereby, from all eternity, he has, for his own glory, unchangeably foreordained whatever comes to pass in time,[47] especially concerning angels and men.*

[46] Isaiah 45:6-7. That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the LORD, and there is none else. I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the LORD do all these things. Ephesians 1:11. In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will. Romans 11:33. O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out! Romans 9:14-15, 18. What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid. For he says to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have

compassion on whom I will have compassion.... Therefore has he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.

[47] Psalm 33:11. The counsel of the LORD stands for ever, the thoughts of his heart to all generations. Isaiah 14:24. The LORD of hosts has sworn, saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have purposed, so shall it stand. Acts 2:23. Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, you have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain. Acts 4:27-28. For of a truth against your holy child Jesus, whom you have anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together, For to do whatever your hand and your counsel determined before to be done. Romans 9:22-23. What if God, willing to show his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory. Ephesians 1:4, 11. According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love.... In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will.

#### **Q. 13. What has God especially decreed concerning angels and men?**

*A. God has elected some angels to glory;[48] by an eternal and immutable decree, out of his mere love, for the praise of his glorious grace, to be manifested in due time. In Christ he has chosen some men to eternal life, and he has chosen the means of doing so:[49]. Also, according to his sovereign power, and the unsearchable counsel of his own will, (whereby he extends or withholds favor as he pleases,) he has passed by and foreordained the rest to dishonor and wrath, to be inflicted for their sin, to the praise of the glory of his justice.[50]*

[48] 1 Timothy 5:21. I charge you before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that you observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

[49] Ephesians 1:4-6; 2:10. According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, To the praise of the glory of his grace, in which he has made us accepted in the beloved.... For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them. 2 Thessalonians 2:13-14. But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God has from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. 1 Peter 1:2. Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.

[50] Romans 9:17-18, 21-22. For the scripture says unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised you up, that I might show my power in you, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth. Therefore has he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.... Has not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honor, and another unto dishonor? What if God, willing to show his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction. Matthew 11:25-26. At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank you, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hid these things from the wise and prudent, and have revealed them unto babes. Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in your sight. 2 Timothy 2:20. But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honor, and some to dishonor. Jude 4. For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ. 1 Peter 2:8. And a

stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed.

#### **Q. 14. How does God execute his decrees?**

*A. God executes his decrees in the works of creation and providence,[51] according to his infallible foreknowledge, and the free and immutable counsel of his own will.[52]*

[51] Revelation 4:11. You art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power: for you have created all things, and for your pleasure they are and were created. See Isaiah 40:12-31.

[52] Ephesians 1:11. In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will. Psalm 148:8. Fire, and hail; snow, and vapours; stormy wind fulfilling his word. Daniel 4:35. And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and he does according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What doest thou? Acts 4:24-28. And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, you art God, which have made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is: Who by the mouth of your servant David have said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. For of a truth against your holy child Jesus, whom you have anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together, For to do whatever your hand and your counsel determined before to be done.

#### **Q. 15. What is the work of creation?**

*A. The work of creation is what God did in the beginning, by the word of his power, making the world from nothing, and all things in it, for himself, within the space of six days, and all very good.[53]*

[53] Genesis 1:1. In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth (see entire chapter). Psalm 33:6, 9. By the word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth.... For he spoke, and it was done; he commanded, and it stood fast. Hebrews 11:3. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. Revelation 4:11. You art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power: for you have created all things, and for your pleasure they are and were created. See Romans 11:36.

#### **Q. 16. How did God create angels?**

*A. God created all the angels[54] to be spirits,[55] immortal,[56] holy,[57] excelling in knowledge,[58] mighty in power,[59] to execute his commandments, and to praise his name,[60] yet subject to change.[61]*

[54] Colossians 1:16. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.

[55] Psalm 104:4. Who makes his angels spirits; his ministers a flaming fire.

[56] Matthew 22:30. For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven. Luke 20:36. Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

[57] Matthew 25:31. When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory.

[58] 2 Samuel 14:17. Then your handmaid said, The word of my lord the king shall now be comfortable: for as an angel of God, so is my lord the king to discern good and bad: therefore the LORD your God will be with thee. Matthew 24:36. But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

[59] 2 Thessalonians 1:7. And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels.

[60] Psalm 91:11-12. For he shall give his angels charge over you, to keep you in all your ways. They shall bear you up in their hands, lest you dash your foot against a stone. Psalm 103:20-21. Bless the LORD, you his angels, that excel in strength, that do his commandments, hearkening unto the voice of his word. Bless you the LORD, all you his hosts; you ministers of his, that do his pleasure.

[61] 2 Peter 2:4. For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment.

#### **Q. 17. How did God create man?**

*A. After God made all other creatures, he created man, male and female;[62] formed the body of the man from the dust of the ground,[63] and the woman from the rib of the man,[64] endowed them with living, reasonable, and immortal souls;[65] made them after his own image,[66] in knowledge,[67] righteousness, and holiness;[68] having the law of God written in their hearts,[69] with power to fulfill it,[70] and dominion over the creatures;[71] yet subject to fall.[72]*

[62] Genesis 1:27. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. Matthew 19:14. And he answered and said unto them, Have you not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female.

[63] Genesis 2:7. And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

[64] Genesis 2:22. And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man.

[65] Genesis 2:7. And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. Job 35:11. Who teaches us more than the beasts of the earth, and makes us wiser than the fowls of heaven? Ecclesiastes 12:7. Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it. Matthew 10:28. And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. Luke 23:43. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto you, To day shall you be with me in paradise.

[66] Genesis 1:27. And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

[67] Colossians 3:10. And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him.

[68] Ephesians 4:24. And that you put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

[69] Romans 2:14-15. For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: Which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another.

[70] Ecclesiastes 7:29. Lo, this only have I found, that God has made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions.

[71] Genesis 1:28. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moves upon the earth. Psalm 8:6-8. You madest him to have dominion over the works of your hands; you have put all things under his feet: All sheep and oxen, yea, and the beasts of the field; The fowl of the air, and the fish of the sea, and whatever passes through the paths of the seas.

[72] Genesis 2:16-17. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eatest of it you shall surely die. Genesis 3:6. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit of it, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. Ecclesiastes 7:29. Lo, this only have I found, that God has made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions.

#### **Q. 18. What are God's works of providence?**

A. God's works of providence are his most holy,[73] wise,[74] and powerful preserving[75] and governing[76] all his creatures; ordering them, and all their actions,[77] to his own glory.[78]

[73] Psalm 145:17. The LORD is righteous in all his ways, and holy in all his works. Leviticus 21:8. You shall sanctify him therefore; for he offers the bread of your God: he shall be holy unto thee: for I the LORD, which sanctify you, am holy.

[74] Psalm 104:24. O LORD, how manifold are your works! in wisdom have you made them all: the earth is full of your riches. Isaiah 28:29. This also comes forth from the LORD of hosts, which is wonderful in counsel, and excellent in working.

[75] Hebrews 1:3. Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high. Psalm 36:6. your righteousness is like the great mountains; your judgments are a great deep: O LORD, you preservest man and beast. Nehemiah 9:6. Thou, even thou, art LORD alone; you have made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are in it, the seas, and all that is in it, and you preserve them all; and the host of heaven worships thee.

[76] Psalm 103:19. The LORD has prepared his throne in the heavens; and his kingdom rules over all. See Job 38:41; Psalm 145:14-16.

[77] Matthew 10:29-31. Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear you not therefore, you are of more value than many sparrows. Genesis 45:7. And God sent me before you to preserve you a posterity in the earth, and to save your lives by a great deliverance. Psalm 135:6. Whatever the LORD pleased, that did he in heaven, and in earth, in the seas, and all deep places.

[78] Romans 11:36. For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen. Isaiah 63:14. As a beast goes down into the valley, the Spirit of the LORD caused him to rest: so didst you lead your people, to make yourself a glorious name.

#### **Q. 19. What is God's providence towards the angels?**

*A. God by his providence permitted some of the angels, willfully and irrecoverably, to fall into sin and damnation,[79] limiting and ordering that fall, and all their sins, to his own glory;[80] and established the rest in holiness and happiness;[81] employing them all,[82] at his pleasure, in the administrations of his power, mercy, and justice.[83]*

[79] Jude 6. And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. See 2 Peter 2:4; Hebrews 2:16; John 8:44.

[80] Job 1:12. And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, all that he has is in your power; only upon himself put not forth your hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD. Matthew 8:31. So the devils besought him, saying, If you cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. Luke 10:17. And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through your name.

[81] 1 Timothy 5:21. I charge you before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that you observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality. Mark 8:38. Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he comes in the glory of his Father with the holy angels. Hebrews 12:22. But you are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels.

[82] Psalm 103:30. Bless the LORD, you his angels, that excel in strength, that do his commandments, hearkening unto the voice of his word. Psalm 104:4. Who makes his angels spirits; his ministers a flaming fire.

[83] Hebrews 1:14. Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation? See 2 Kings 19:35.

#### **Q. 20. What was the providence of God toward man in the estate in which he was created?**

*A. The providence of God toward man in the estate in which he was created, was placing him in paradise, appointing him to dress it, giving him liberty to eat of the fruit of the earth;[84] putting the creatures under his dominion,[85] and ordaining marriage for his help;[86] affording him communion with himself;[87] instituting the sabbath;[88] entering into a covenant of life with him, upon condition of personal, perfect, and perpetual obedience,[89] of which the tree of life was a pledge;[90] and forbidding him to eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, upon the pain of death.[91]*

[84] Genesis 2:8, 15-16. And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed.... And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat.

[85] Genesis 1:28. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.

[86] Genesis 2:18. And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. See Matthew 19:3-9; Ephesians 5:31.

[87] Genesis 1:26-29. And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moves upon the earth. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. Genesis 3:8. And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.

[88] Genesis 2:3. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. Compared with Exodus 20:11. For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and made it holy it.

[89] Genesis 2:16-17. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eatest of it you shall surely die. Galatians 3:12. And the law is not of faith: but, The man that does them shall live in them. Romans 10:5. For Moses describes the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which does those things shall live by them.

[90] Genesis 2:9. And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil. Genesis 3:22-24. And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.

[91] Genesis 2:17. But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eatest of it you shall surely die. Compared with James 2:10. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

#### **Q. 21. Did man continue in that estate in which God first created him?**

*A. Our first parents being left to the freedom of their own will, through the temptation of Satan, transgressed the commandment of God in eating the forbidden fruit, and thereby fell from the estate of innocence in which they were created.[92]*

[92] Genesis 3:6-8, 13. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit of it, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.... And the LORD God said unto the woman, What is this that you have done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. Ecclesiastes 7:29. Lo, this only have I found, that God has made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions. 2 Corinthians 11:3. But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

## Q. 22. Did all mankind fall in that first transgression?

A. *The covenant being made with Adam as a public person, not for himself only, but for his posterity, all mankind descending from him by ordinary generation,[93] sinned in him, and fell with him in that first transgression.[94]*

[93] Acts 17:26. And has made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and has determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation. Romans 3:23. For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

[94] Genesis 2:16-17. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eatest of it you shall surely die. James 2:10. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. Compared with Romans 5:12-20. Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: (For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come. But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, has abounded unto many. And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification. For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound. 1 Corinthians 15:21-22. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

## Q. 23. Into what estate did the fall bring mankind?

A. *The fall brought mankind into an estate of sin and misery.[95]*

[95] Genesis 3:16-19. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because you have hearkened unto the voice of your wife, and have eaten of the tree, of which I commanded you, saying, You shall not eat of it: cursed is the ground for your sake; in sorrow shall you eat of it all the days of your life; thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and you shall eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of your face shall you eat bread, till you return unto the ground; for out of it were you taken: for dust you art, and unto dust shall you return. Romans 5:12. Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned. Ephesians 2:1. And you has he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins. Romans 3:16, 23. Destruction and misery are in their ways.... For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

## Q. 24. What is sin?

A. *Sin is any want of conformity to, or transgression of, any law of God, given as a rule to the reasonable creature.[96]*

[96] Leviticus 5:17. And if a soul sin, and commit any of these things which are forbidden to be done by the commandments of the LORD; though he wist it not, yet is he guilty, and shall bear his iniquity. James 4:17. Therefore to him that knows to do good, and does it not, to him it is sin. 1

John 3:4. Whosoever commits sin transgresses also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. See Galatians 3:10, 12.

**Q. 25. What does the sinfulness of that estate into which man fell consist of?**

*A. The sinfulness of that estate into which man fell, consists of the guilt of Adam's first sin,[97] the want of that righteousness in which he was created, and the corruption of his nature, whereby he is utterly indisposed, disabled, and made opposite to all that is spiritually good, and wholly and continually inclined to all evil,[98] which is commonly called original sin, and from which all actual transgressions proceed.[99]*

[97] Romans 5:12, 19. Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.... For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. See 1 Corinthians 15:22.

[98] Romans 3:10-12. As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeks after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that does good, no, not one (see verses 13-19). Ephesians 2:1-3. And you has he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins: In which in time past you walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. Romans 5:6. For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. Romans 8:7-8. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. Genesis 6:5. And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. See Colossians 3:10; Ephesians 4:24.

[99] James 1:14-15. But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. Then when lust has conceived, it brings forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, brings forth death. Psalm 53:1-3. The fool has said in his heart, There is no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: there is none that does good. God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, that did seek God. Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; there is none that does good, no, not one. Matthew 15:19. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies. See Romans 3:10-18, 23; Galatians 5:19-21.

**Q. 26. How is original sin conveyed from our first parents to their posterity?**

*A. Original sin is conveyed from our first parents to their posterity by natural generation, so that all who proceed from them in that way are conceived and born in sin.[100]*

[100] Psalm 51:5. Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. Job 14:4. Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? not one. John 3:6. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

**Q. 27. What misery did the fall bring upon mankind?**

*A. The fall brought upon mankind the loss of communion with God,[101] his displeasure, and the curse [102]; so that we are by nature children of wrath,[103] bond slaves to Satan,[104] and justly liable to all punishments in this world, and that which is to come.[105]*

[101] Genesis 3:8, 10, 24. And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God

amongst the trees of the garden.... And he said, I heard your voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.... So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. John 8:34, 42, 44. Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever commits sin is the servant of sin. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, you would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. you are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. Ephesians 2:12. That at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world.

[102] Genesis 3:16-19. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because you have hearkened unto the voice of your wife, and have eaten of the tree, of which I commanded you, saying, You shall not eat of it: cursed is the ground for your sake; in sorrow shall you eat of it all the days of your life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and you shall eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of your face shall you eat bread, till you return unto the ground; for out of it were you taken: for dust you art, and unto dust shall you return. Job 5:7. Yet man is born unto trouble, as the sparks fly upward. Ecclesiastes 2:22-23. For what has man of all his labor, and of the vexation of his heart, in which he has labored under the sun? For all his days are sorrows, and his travail grief; yea, his heart takes not rest in the night. This is also vanity. Romans 8:18-23. For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. For the earnest expectation of the creature waits for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who has subjected the same in hope, Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now. And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body.

[103] Ephesians 2:2-3. In which in time past you walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. John 3:36. He that believes on the Son has everlasting life: and he that believes not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abides on him. Romans 1:18. For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness. Ephesians 5:6. Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things comes the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

[104] 2 Timothy 2:26. And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

[105] Genesis 2:17. But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eatest of it you shall surely die. Lamentations 3:39. Wherefore does a living man complain, a man for the punishment of his sins? Romans 6:23. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. Matthew 25:41. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. Matthew 25:46. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal. Jude 7. Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

**Q. 28. What are the punishments for sin in this world?**

*A. The punishments for sin in this world are either inward, such as blindness of mind,[106] a reprobate sense,[107] strong delusions,[108] hardness of heart,[109] horror of conscience,[110] and vile affections;[111] or outward, such as the curse of God on the creatures for our sakes,[112] and all other evils that befall us in our bodies, names, estates, relations, and employments;[113] together with death itself.[114]*

[106] Ephesians 4:18. Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart.

[107] Romans 1:28. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient.

[108] 2 Thessalonians 2:11. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.

[109] Romans 2:5. But after your hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto yourself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God.

[110] Isaiah 33:14. The sinners in Zion are afraid; fearfulness has surprised the hypocrites. Who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire? who among us shall dwell with everlasting burnings? Genesis 4:13. And Cain said unto the LORD, My punishment is greater than I can bear. Matthew 27:4. Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see you to that.

[111] Romans 1:26. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature.

[112] Genesis 3:17. And unto Adam he said, Because you have hearkened unto the voice of your wife, and have eaten of the tree, of which I commanded you, saying, You shall not eat of it: cursed is the ground for your sake; in sorrow shall you eat of it all the days of your life.

[113] Deuteronomy 28:15. But it shall come to pass, if you will not hearken unto the voice of the LORD your God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command you this day; that all these curses shall come upon you, and overtake you (see verses 16-68).

[114] Romans 6:21, 23. What fruit had you then in those things whereof you are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.... For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

**Q. 29. What are the punishments of sin in the world to come?**

*A. The punishments of sin in the world to come, are everlasting separation from the comfortable presence of God, and most grievous torments in soul and body, without intermission, in hell-fire forever.[115]*

[115] 2 Thessalonians 1:9. Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power. Mark 9:43-44, 46, 48. And if your hand offend you, cut it off: it is better for you to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. Luke 16:24, 26. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.... And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence. See Matthew 25:41, 46; Revelation 14:11; John 3:36.

**Q. 30. Does God leave all mankind to perish in the estate of sin and misery?**

A. God does not leave all men to perish in the estate of sin and misery,[116] into which they fell by the breach of the first covenant, commonly called the covenant of works;[117] but of his mere love and mercy delivers his elect out of it, and brings them into an estate of salvation by the second covenant, commonly called the covenant of grace.[118]

[116] 1 Thessalonians 5:9. For God has not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ.

[117] Genesis 3:17. And unto Adam he said, Because you have hearkened unto the voice of your wife, and have eaten of the tree, of which I commanded you, saying, You shall not eat of it: cursed is the ground for your sake; in sorrow shall you eat of it all the days of your life. Romans 5:12, 15. Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.... But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, has abounded unto many. Galatians 3:10, 12. For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continues not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.... And the law is not of faith: but, The man that does them shall live in them.

[118] Titus 3:4-7. But after that the kindness and love of God our Savior toward man appeared, Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life. Galatians 3:21. Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. Romans 3:20-22. Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference. 2 Thessalonians 2:13-14. But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God has from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. See Acts 13:48; Eph. 1:4-5.

**Q. 31. With whom was the covenant of grace made?**

A. The covenant of grace was made with Christ as the second Adam, and in him it was made with all the elect as his seed.[119]

[119] Galatians 3:16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He says not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to your seed, which is Christ. Romans 5:15. But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, has abounded unto many. See verses 16-21. Isaiah 53:10-11. Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he has put him to grief: when you shall make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. Isaiah 59:20-21. And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, says the LORD. As for me, this is my covenant with them, says the LORD; My spirit that is upon you, and my words which I have put in your mouth, shall not depart out of your mouth, nor out of the mouth of your seed, nor out of the mouth of your seed's seed, says the LORD, from henceforth and for ever.

### Q. 32. How is the grace of God manifested in the second covenant?

A. *The grace of God is manifested in the second covenant, in that he freely provides and offers to sinners a Mediator,[120] and life and salvation by him;[121] and requiring faith as the condition to interest them in him,[122] promises and gives his Holy Spirit[123] to all his elect, to work that faith in them,[124] with all other saving graces;[125] and to enable them to all holy obedience,[126] as the evidence of the truth of their faith[127] and thankfulness to God,[128] and as the way which he has appointed them to salvation.[129]*

[120] Genesis 3:15. And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her seed; it shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise his heel. Isaiah 42:6. I the LORD have called you in righteousness, and will hold your hand, and will keep you, and give you for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles. John 3:16. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. John 6:27. Labor not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endures unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him has God the Father sealed. 1 Timothy 2:5. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.

[121] 1 John 5:11-12. And this is the record, that God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has life; and he that has not the Son of God has not life.

[122] John 3:16, 36. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.... He that believes on the Son has everlasting life: and he that believes not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abides on him. John 1:12. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name.

[123] Isaiah 59:21. As for me, this is my covenant with them, says the LORD; My spirit that is upon you, and my words which I have put in your mouth, shall not depart out of your mouth, nor out of the mouth of your seed, nor out of the mouth of your seed's seed, says the LORD, from henceforth and for ever. Luke 11:13. If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him? John 14:16-20. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees him not, neither knows him: but you know him; for he dwells with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. Yet a little while, and the world sees me no more; but you see me: because I live, you shall live also. At that day you shall know that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you. 1 Corinthians 12:13. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. Romans 8:9. But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his (see verses 4, 11, 14-16).

[124] 2 Corinthians 4:13. We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak. 1 Corinthians 12:3, 9. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calls Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost.... To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit. Ephesians 2:8-10. For by grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them. Acts 16:14. And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of youratira, which worshipped God, heard us: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul. 2 Peter 1:1. Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Savior Jesus Christ.

[125] Galatians 5:22-23. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

[126] Ezekiel 36:27. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and you shall keep my judgments, and do them. Ephesians 2:10. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them.

[127] James 2:18, 22. Yea, a man may say, You have faith, and I have works: show me your faith without your works, and I will show you my faith by my works.... Seest you how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

[128] 2 Corinthians 5:14-15. For the love of Christ constrains us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead: And that he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

[129] Ephesians 2:10. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them. Titus 2:14. Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

### **Q. 33. Was the covenant of grace always administered after one and the same manner?**

A. *The covenant of grace was not always administered after the same manner; the administrations of it under the Old Testament were different from those under the New.[130]*

[130] 2 Corinthians 3:6-9. Who also has made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit gives life. But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away: How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious? For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more does the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory. See Hebrews 8:7-13.

### **Q. 34. How was the covenant of grace administered under the Old Testament?**

A. *The covenant of grace was administered under the Old Testament, by promises,[131] prophecies,[132] sacrifices,[133] circumcision,[134] the passover,[135] and other types and ordinances, which all fore-signified Christ then to come, and were sufficient for that time to build up the elect in faith in the promised Messiah,[136] by whom they then had full remission of sin, and eternal salvation.[137]*

[131] Romans 15:8. Now I say that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers. See for example Genesis 3:15; 12:1-3; 15:5.

[132] Acts 3:20, 24. And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you.... Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days. See for example Isaiah 52:13-53:12.

[133] Hebrews 10:1. For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. See Leviticus 1-7.

[134] Romans 4:11. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe,

though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also. See Genesis 17:1-14.

[135] 1 Corinthians 5:7. Purge out therefore the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, as you are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us. Exodus 12:14, 17, 24. And this day shall be unto you for a memorial; and you shall keep it a feast to the LORD throughout your generations; you shall keep it a feast by an ordinance for ever.... And you shall observe the feast of unleavened bread; for in this selfsame day have I brought your armies out of the land of Egypt: therefore shall you observe this day in your generations by an ordinance for ever.... And you shall observe this thing for an ordinance to you and to your sons for ever (see entire chapter).

[136] Hebrews 8:1-2. Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man. See chapters 8-10, Hebrews 11:13. These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

[137] Galatians 3:7-9, 14. Know you therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In you shall all nations be blessed. So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham.... That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

#### **Q. 35. How is the covenant of grace administered under the New Testament?**

*A. Under the New Testament, when Christ the substance was exhibited, the same covenant of grace was and still is to be administered in the preaching of the Word,[138] the administration of the sacraments of Baptism[139] and the Lord's Supper;[140] in which grace and salvation are presented in more fulness, evidence, and efficacy, to all nations.[141]*

[138] Luke 24:47-48. And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And you are witnesses of these things. See Matthew 28:19-20.

[139] Matthew 28:19-20. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

[140] Matthew 26:28. For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. 1 Corinthians 11:23-25. For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me.

[141] Romans 1:16. For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believes; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. 2 Corinthians 3:6-9. Who also has made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit gives life. But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away: How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious? For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more does the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory. Hebrews 8:6, 10-11. But now has he obtained a

more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.... For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: And they shall not teach every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. Matthew 28:19. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. See Ephesians 3:1-12.

#### **Q. 36. Who is the Mediator of the covenant of grace?**

*A. The only Mediator of the covenant of grace is the Lord Jesus Christ,[142] who, being the eternal Son of God, of one substance and equal with the Father,[143] in the fulness of time became man,[144] and so was and continues to be God and man, in two entire distinct natures, and one person, forever.[145]*

[142] 1 Timothy 2:5. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus. John 14:6. Jesus says unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man comes unto the Father, but by me. Acts 4:12. Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

[143] John 1:1, 14, 18. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.... And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.... No man has seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he has declared him. John 10:30. I and my Father are one. Philippians 2:6. Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God. Psalm 2:7. I will declare the decree: the LORD has said unto me, You art my Son; this day have I begotten thee. Matthew 3:17. And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Matthew 17:5. While he yet spoke, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear you him.

[144] Galatians 4:4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law. Matthew 1:23. Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us. See John 1:14.

[145] Luke 1:35. And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon you, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God. Acts 1:11. Which also said, you men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen him go into heaven. Romans 9:5. Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen. Colossians 2:9. For in him dwells all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. Hebrews 7:24-25. But this man, because he continues ever, has an unchangeable priesthood. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever lives to make intercession for them. Hebrews 13:8. Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever. See Philippians 2:5-11.

#### **Q. 37. How did Christ, being the Son of God, become man?**

*A. Christ the Son of God became man, by taking to himself a true body, and a reasonable soul,[146] being conceived by the power of the Holy Ghost in the womb of the virgin Mary, of her substance, and born of her,[147] yet without sin.[148]*

[146] John 1:14. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth. Matthew 26:38. Then says he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry you here, and watch with me. Philippians 2:7. But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men. Hebrews 2:14-17. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil; And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. For verily he took not on him the nature of angels; but he took on him the seed of Abraham. Wherefore in all things it was necessary for him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. See Luke 2:40, 52; John 11:33.

[147] Luke 1:27, 31, 35. To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary.... And, behold, you shall conceive in your womb, and bring forth a son, and shall call his name JESUS.... And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon you, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God. Galatians 4:4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.

[148] Hebrews 4:15. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin. Hebrews 7:26. For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens. 2 Corinthians 5:21. For he has made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him. 1 John 3:5. And you know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.

#### **Q. 38. Why was it required that the Mediator be God?**

*A. It was required that the Mediator be God, so that he might sustain and keep the human nature from sinking under the infinite wrath of God, and the power of death,[149] give worth and efficacy to his sufferings, obedience, and intercession;[150] to satisfy God's justice,[151] procure his favor,[152] purchase a peculiar people,[153] give his Spirit to them,[154] conquer all their enemies,[155] and bring them to everlasting salvation.[156]*

[149] Acts 2:24-25. Whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it. For David speaks concerning him, I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved. Romans 1:4. And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead. Romans 4:25. Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification. Hebrews 9:14. How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

[150] Acts 20:28. Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost has made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he has purchased with his own blood. Hebrews 9:14. How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? Hebrews 7:25-28. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever lives to make intercession for them. For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens; Who needs not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself. For the law makes men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was since the law, makes the Son, who is consecrated for evermore. See John 17.

[151] Romans 3:24-26. Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believes in Jesus.

[152] Ephesians 1:6. To the praise of the glory of his grace, in which he has made us accepted in the beloved. Matthew 3:17. And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

[153] Titus 2:13-14. Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Savior Jesus Christ; Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

[154] Galatians 4:6. And because you are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. John 15:26. But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceeds from the Father, he shall testify of me. See John 16:7; 14:26.

[155] Luke 1:68-69, 71, 74. Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he has visited and redeemed his people, And has raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David;... That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us;... That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear.

[156] Hebrews 5:8-9. Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him. Hebrews 9:11-15. But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifies to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

#### **Q. 39. Why was it required that the Mediator be a man?**

*A. It was required that the Mediator be a man, so that he might advance our nature,[157] perform obedience to the law,[158] suffer and make intercession for us in our nature,[159] have a fellow-feeling of our infirmities;[160] that we might receive the adoption of sons,[161] have comfort, and access the throne of grace with boldness.[162]*

[157] Hebrews 2:16. For verily he took not on him the nature of angels; but he took on him the seed of Abraham. 2 Peter 1:4. Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

[158] Galatians 4:4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law. Matthew 5:17. Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. Romans 5:19. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. Philippians 2:8. And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

[159] Hebrews 2:14. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil. Hebrews 7:24-25. But this man, because he continues ever, has an unchangeable priesthood. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever lives to make intercession for them.

[160] Hebrews 4:15. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

[161] Galatians 4:5. To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

[162] Hebrews 4:16. Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

#### **Q. 40. Why was it required that the Mediator should be God and man in one person?**

A. *It was required that the Mediator, who was to reconcile God and man, should himself be both God and man, and this in one person, so that the proper works of each nature might be accepted by God for us,[163] and relied on by us as the works of the whole person.[164]*

[163] Matthew 1:21, 23. And she shall bring forth a son, and you shall call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.... Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us. Matthew 3:17. And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Hebrews 9:14. How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

[164] 1 Peter 2:6. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believes on him shall not be confounded.

#### **Q. 41. Why was our Mediator called Jesus?**

A. *Our Mediator was called Jesus, because he saves his people from their sins.[165]*

[165] Matthew 1:21. And she shall bring forth a son, and you shall call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

#### **Q. 42. Why was our Mediator called Christ?**

A. *Our Mediator was called Christ, because he was anointed with the Holy Ghost above measure,[166] and so set apart, and fully furnished with all authority and ability,[167] to execute the offices of prophet,[168] priest,[169] and king of his church,[170] in the estate both of his humiliation and exaltation.*

[166] Matthew 3:16. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him. Compared with Acts 10:37-38. That word, I say, you know, which was published throughout all Judaea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached; How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him. John 3:34. For he whom God has sent speaks the words of God: for God gives not the Spirit by measure unto him. Psalm 45:7. You lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, your God, has anointed you with the oil of gladness above your fellows.

[167] John 6:27. Labor not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endures unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him has God the Father sealed. Matthew 28:18-20. And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen. Romans 1:3-4. Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead.

[168] Acts 3:21-22. Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began. For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall you hear in all things whatever he shall say unto you. Luke 4:18, 21. The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he has anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he has sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised.... And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. Hebrews 1:1-2. God, who at various times and in diverse manners spoke in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Has in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds. Deuteronomy 18:18. I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto you, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him.

[169] Hebrews 5:5-7. So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, You art my Son, to day have I begotten thee. As he says also in another place, You art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared. Hebrews 4:14-15. Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

[170] Psalm 2:6. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. Luke 1:32-34. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? John 18:37. Pilate therefore said unto him, Art you a king then? Jesus answered, You sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth hears my voice. Matthew 21:5. Tell you the daughter of Sion, Behold, your King comes unto you, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. Isaiah 9:6-7. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this. Philippians 2:8-11. And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also has highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

#### **Q. 43. How does Christ execute the office of a prophet?**

A. *Christ executes the office of a prophet, in his revealing to the church,[171] in all ages, by his Spirit and Word,[172] in diverse ways of administration,[173] the whole will of God,[174] in all things concerning their edification and salvation.[175]*

[171] John 1:18. No man has seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he has declared him.

[172] 1 Peter 1:10-12. Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.

[173] Hebrews 1:1-2. God, who at various times and in diverse manners spoke in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Has in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

[174] John 15:15. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knows not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.

[175] Acts 20:32. And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

Ephesians 4:11-13. And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ. John 20:31. But these are written, that you might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing you might have life through his name.

#### **Q. 44. How does Christ execute the office of a priest?**

*A. Christ executes the office of a priest, in his once offering himself a sacrifice without spot to God,[176] to be a reconciliation for the sins of his people;[177] and in making continual intercession for them.[178]*

[176] Hebrews 9:14, 28. How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?... So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation. Hebrews 10:12. But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God. See Isaiah 53.

[177] Hebrews 2:17. Wherefore in all things it was necessary for him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. 2 Corinthians 5:18. And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation. Colossians 1:21-22. And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now has he reconciled in the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight.

[178] Hebrews 7:25. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever lives to make intercession for them. Hebrews 9:24. For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us.

#### **Q. 45. How does Christ execute the office of a king?**

*A. Christ executes the office of a king, in calling a people to himself out of the world,[179] and giving them officers,[180] laws,[181] and censures, by which he visibly governs them;[182] in bestowing saving grace upon his elect,[183] rewarding their obedience,[184] and correcting them for their sins,[185] preserving and supporting them under all their temptations and sufferings,[186] restraining and overcoming all their enemies,[187] and powerfully ordering all things for his own glory,[188] and their good;[189] and also in taking vengeance on the rest, who know not God, and obey not the gospel.[190]*

[179] Acts 15:14-16. Simeon has declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name. And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written, After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins of it, and I will set it up. Genesis 49:10. The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be. Psalm 110:3. your people shall be willing in the day of your power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: you have the dew of your youth. John 17:2. As you have given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as you have given him.

[180] Ephesians 4:11-12. And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ. 1 Corinthians 12:28. And God has set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

[181] Isaiah 33:22. For the LORD is our judge, the LORD is our lawgiver, the LORD is our king; he will save us.

[182] Matthew 18:17-18. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto you as a heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. 1 Corinthians 5:4- 5. In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

[183] Acts 5:31. Him has God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Savior, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

[184] Revelation 22:12. And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. Revelation 2:10. Fear none of those things which you shall suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that you may be tried; and you shall have tribulation ten days: be you faithful unto death, and I will give you a crown of life.

[185] Revelation 3:19. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

[186] Isaiah 63:9. In all their affliction he was afflicted, and the angel of his presence saved them: in his love and in his pity he redeemed them; and he bare them, and carried them all the days of old.

[187] 1 Corinthians 15:25. For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet. Psalm 110:1-2. The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit you at my right hand, until I make your enemies your footstool. The LORD shall send the rod of your strength out of Zion: rule you in the midst of your enemies.

[188] Romans 14:10-11. But why dost you judge your brother? or why dost you set at nought your brother? For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. For it is written, As I live, says the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God.

[189] Romans 8:28. And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

[190] 2 Thessalonians 1:8-9. In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power. Psalm 2:8-9. Ask of me, and I shall give you the heathen for your inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for your possession. You shall break them with a rod of iron; you shall dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

#### **Q. 46. What was the estate of Christ's humiliation?**

*A. The estate of Christ's humiliation was that low condition, in which he for our sakes, emptying himself of his glory, took upon him the form of a servant,[191] in his conception[192] and birth,[193] life,[194] death,[195] and after his death,[196] until his resurrection.[197]*

[191] Philippians 2:6-8. Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

[192] Luke 1:31. And, behold, you shall conceive in your womb, and bring forth a son, and shall call his name

#### **JESUS.**

[193] Luke 2:7. And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.

[194] Galatians 4:4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law. 2 Corinthians 8:9. For you know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that you through his poverty might be rich. Luke 9:58. And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man has not where to lay his head. Hebrews 2:18. For in that he himself has suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted. Isaiah 53:3. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.

[195] Psalm 22:1. My God, my God, why have you forsaken me? why art you so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring? Compared with Matthew 27:46. And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why have you forsaken me? Isaiah 53:10. Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he has put him to grief: when you shall make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. 1 John 2:2. And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for our's only, but also for the sins of the whole world. Philippians 2:8. And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

[196] Matthew 12:40. For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. 1 Corinthians 15:3-4. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures.

[197] Acts 2:24-27, 31. Whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it. For David speaks concerning him, I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved: Therefore did my heart rejoice, and my tongue was glad; moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope: Because you will not leave my soul in hell, neither will you suffer your Holy One 28 to see corruption.... He seeing this before spoke of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.

Q. 47. How did Christ humble himself in his conception and birth?

A. Christ humbled himself in his conception and birth, in that, being from all eternity the Son of God, in the bosom of the Father, he was pleased in the fulness of time to become the son of man, made of a woman of low estate, and to be born of her; with diverse circumstances of more than ordinary abasement.[198]

[198] John 1:14, 18. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.... No man has seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he has declared him. Galatians 4:4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law. Luke 2:7. And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.

Q. 48. How did Christ humble himself in his life?

A. Christ humbled himself in his life, by subjecting himself to the law,[199] which he perfectly fulfilled;[200] and by conflicting with the indignities of the world,[201] temptations of Satan,[202] and infirmities in his flesh, whether common to the nature of man, or particularly accompanying that his low condition.[203]

[199] Galatians 4:4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.

[200] Matthew 5:17. Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. Romans 5:19. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

[201] Psalm 22:6. But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men, and despised of the people. Isaiah 53:2-3. For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he has no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Hebrews 12:2-3. Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest you be wearied and faint in your minds.

[202] Matthew 4:1-12. Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil, etc. Luke 4:13. And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

[203] Hebrews 2:17-18. Wherefore in all things it was necessary for him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. For in that he himself has suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted. Hebrews 4:15. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin. Isaiah 52:13-14. Behold, my servant shall deal prudently, he shall be exalted and

extolled, and be very high. As many were astonished at thee; his visage was so marred more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men.

Q. 49. How did Christ humble himself in his death?

A. Christ humbled himself in his death, in that having been betrayed by Judas,[204] forsaken by his disciples,[205] scorned and rejected by the world,[206] condemned by Pilate, and tormented 29 by his persecutors,[207] having also conflicted with the terrors of death, and the powers of darkness, felt and borne the weight of God's wrath,[208] he laid down his life an offering for sin,[209] enduring the painful, shameful, and cursed death of the cross.[210]

[204] Matthew 27:4. Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see you to that.

[205] Matthew 26:56. But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

[206] Isaiah 53:2-3. For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he has no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.

[207] Matthew 27:26-50. Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified, etc. John 19:34. But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. See Luke 22:63-64.

[208] Luke 22:44. And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground. Matthew 27:46. And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?

[209] Isaiah 53:10. Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he has put him to grief: when you shall make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. Matthew 20:28. Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many. See Mark 10:45.

[210] Philippians 2:8. And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Hebrews 12:2. Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. Galatians 3:13. Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangs on a tree.

Q. 50. In what did consisted Christ's humiliation after his death?

A. Christ's humiliation after his death consisted in his being buried,[211] and continuing in the state of the dead, and under the power of death till the third day;[212] which has been otherwise expressed in these words, He descended into hell.

[211] 1 Corinthians 15:3-4. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures.

[212] Psalm 16:10. For you will not leave my soul in hell; neither will you suffer your Holy One to see corruption. Acts 2:24-27, 31. Whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it. For David speaks concerning him, I

foresaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved: Therefore did my heart rejoice, and my tongue was glad; moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope: Because you will not leave my soul in hell, neither will you suffer your Holy One to see corruption.... He seeing this before spoke of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. Romans 6:9. Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dies no more; death has no more dominion over him. Matthew 12:40. For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

Q. 51. What was the estate of Christ's exaltation?

A. The estate of Christ's exaltation comprehends his resurrection,[213] ascension,[214] sitting at the right hand of the Father,[215] and his coming again to judge the world.[216]

[213] 1 Corinthians 15:4. And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures.

[214] Psalm 68:18. You have ascended on high, you have led captivity captive: you have received gifts for men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell among them. Acts 1:11. Which also said, you men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen him go into heaven. Ephesians 4:8. Wherefore he says, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

[215] Ephesians 1:20. Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places. Psalm 110:1. The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit you at my right hand, until I make your enemies your footstool. Acts 2:33-34. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he has shed forth this, which you now see and hear. For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he says himself, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit you on my right hand, Hebrews 1:3. Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high

[216] Acts 1:11. Which also said, you men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen him go into heaven. Acts 17:31. Because he has appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he has ordained; whereof he has given assurance unto all men, in that he has raised him from the dead. See Matthew 16:27. For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

Q. 52. How was Christ exalted in his resurrection?

A. Christ was exalted in his resurrection, in that, not having seen corruption in death, (of which it was not possible for him to be held,) [217] and having the very same body in which he suffered, with the essential properties of it, [218] (but without mortality, and other common infirmities belonging to this life,) really united to his soul, [219] he rose again from the dead the third day by his own power; [220] whereby he declared himself to be the Son of God, [221] to have satisfied divine justice, [222] to have vanquished death, and him that had the power of it, [223] and to be Lord of quick and dead: [224] all which he did as a public person, [225] the head of his church, [226] for their justification, [227] quickening in grace, [228] support against enemies, [229] and to assure them of their resurrection from the dead at the last day. [230]

[217] Acts 2:24, 27. Whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.... Because you will not leave my soul in hell, neither will you suffer your Holy One to see corruption.

[218] Luke 24:39. Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit has not flesh and bones, as you see me have.

[219] Romans 6:9. Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dies no more; death has no more dominion over him. Revelation 1:18. I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

[220] John 10:18. No man takes it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.

[221] Romans 1:4. And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead.

[222] Romans 8:34. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us. Romans 3:25-26. Whom God set forth as a propitiation by His blood, through faith, to demonstrate His righteousness, because in His forbearance God had passed over the sins that were previously committed, to demonstrate at the present time His righteousness, that He might be just and the justifier of the one who has faith in Jesus. Hebrews 9:13-14. For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifies to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

[223] Hebrews 2:14. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil.

[224] Romans 14:9. For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.

[225] 1 Corinthians 15:21-22. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. Isaiah 53:10-11. Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise Him; He has put Him to grief. When You make His soul an offering for sin, He shall see His seed, He shall prolong His days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in His hand. He shall see the labor of His soul, and be satisfied. By His knowledge My righteous Servant shall justify many, for He shall bear their iniquities.

[226] Ephesians 1:20-23. Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And has put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that fills all in all. Colossians 1:18. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.

[227] Romans 4:25. Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

[228] Ephesians 2:1, 5-6. And you has he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins.... Even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved;) And has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ

Jesus. Colossians 2:12. Buried with him in baptism, in which also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him from the dead.

[229] 1 Corinthians 15:25-27. For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. For he has put all things under his feet. But when he says all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him. Psalm 2:7-9. I will declare the decree: the LORD has said unto me, You art my Son; this day have I begotten thee. Ask of me, and I shall give you the heathen for your inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for your possession. You shall break them with a rod of iron; you shall dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

[230] 1 Corinthians 15:20. But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept. I Thessalonians 4:14. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him.

Q. 53. How was Christ exalted in his ascension?

A. Christ was exalted in his ascension, in that having after his resurrection often appeared unto and conversed with his apostles, speaking to them of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God,[231] and giving them commission to preach the gospel to all nations,[232] forty days after 32 his resurrection, he, in our nature, and as our head,[233] triumphing over enemies,[234] visibly went up into the highest heavens, there to receive gifts for men,[235] to raise up our affections thither,[236] and to prepare a place for us,[237] where he himself is, and shall continue till his second coming at the end of the world.[238]

[231] Acts 1:2-3. Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen: To whom also he showed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God.

[232] Matthew 28:19-20. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

[233] John 20:17. Jesus says unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God. Hebrews 6:20. Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

[234] Ephesians 4:8. Wherefore he says, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

[235] Acts 1:9-11. And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight. And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; Which also said, you men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen him go into heaven. Ephesians 4:7-8. But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. Wherefore he says, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. Psalm 68:18. You have ascended on high, you have led captivity captive: you have received gifts for men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell among them. Ephesians 4:10. He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things. Acts 2:33. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he has shed forth this, which you now see and hear.

[236] Colossians 3:1-2. If you then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sits on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

[237] John 14:3. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there you may be also.

[238] Acts 3:21. Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.

#### **Q. 54. How is Christ exalted in his sitting at the right hand of God?**

*A. Christ is exalted in his sitting at the right hand of God, in that as God-man he is advanced to the highest favor with God the Father,[239] with all fulness of joy,[240] glory,[241] and power over all things in heaven and earth;[242] and does gather and defend his church, and subdue their enemies; furnisheth his ministers and people with gifts and graces,[243] and makes intercession for them.[244]*

[239] Philippians 2:9. Wherefore God also has highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name.

[240] Acts 2:28. You have made known to me the ways of life; you shall make me full of joy with your countenance. Psalm 16:11. You will show me the path of life: in your presence is fulness of joy; at your right hand there are pleasures for evermore.

[241] John 17:5. And now, O Father, glorify you me with your own self with the glory which I had with you before the world was.

[242] Daniel 7:13-14. I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. Ephesians 1:22. And has put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church. 1 Peter 3:22. Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him.

[243] Ephesians 4:10-12. He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things. And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ. Psalm 110:1. The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit you at my right hand, until I make your enemies your footstool. Hebrews 10:12-14. But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he has perfected for ever them that are sanctified. Ezekiel 37:24. And David my servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them.

[244] Romans 8:34. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us. 1 John 2:1. My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. Hebrews 7:25. Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them.

#### **Q. 55. How does Christ make intercession?**

A. Christ makes intercession, by his appearing in our nature continually before the Father in heaven,[245] in the merit of his obedience and sacrifice on earth,[246] declaring his will to have it applied to all believers;[247] answering all accusations against them,[248] and procuring for them quiet of conscience, notwithstanding daily failings,[249] access with boldness to the throne of grace,[250] and acceptance of their persons[251] and services.[252]

[245] Hebrews 9:12, 24. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.... For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us.

[246] Isaiah 53:12. Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he has poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors. Hebrews 1:3. Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.

[247] John 3:16. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. John 17:9, 20, 24. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which you have given me; for they are your.... Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word.... Father, I will that they also, whom you have given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which you have given me: for you lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

[248] Romans 8:33-34. Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us.

[249] Romans 5:1-2. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: By whom also we have access by faith into this grace in which we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. 1 John 2:1-2. My little children, these things write I unto you, that you sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

[250] Hebrews 4:16. Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

[251] Ephesians 1:6. To the praise of the glory of his grace, in which he has made us accepted in the beloved.

[252] 1 Peter 2:5. you also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

Q. 56. How is Christ to be exalted in his coming again to judge the world?

A. Christ is to be exalted in his coming again to judge the world, in that he, who was unjustly judged and condemned by wicked men,[253] shall come again at the last day in great power,[254] and in the full manifestation of his own glory, and of his Father's, with all his holy angels,[255] with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God,[256] to judge the world in righteousness.[257]

[253] Acts 3:14-15. But you denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you; And killed the Prince of life, whom God has raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.

[254] Matthew 24:30. And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. 2 Thessalonians 1:9-10. Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power; When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day.

[255] Luke 9:26. For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy angels. Matthew 25:31. When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory.

[256] 1 Thessalonians 4:16. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.

[257] Acts 17:31. Because he has appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he has ordained; whereof he has given assurance unto all men, in that he has raised him from the dead. 2 Thessalonians 1:6-8. Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Q. 57. What benefits has Christ procured by his mediation?

A. Christ, by his mediation, has procured redemption,[258] with all other benefits of the covenant of grace.[259] 35 [258] 1 Timothy 2:5-6. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time. Hebrews 9:12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. Ephesians 1:7. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace.

[259] 2 Corinthians 1:20. For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us. Ephesians 1:3-6. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, To the praise of the glory of his grace, in which he has made us accepted in the beloved. 2 Peter 1:3-4. According as his divine power has given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that has called us to glory and virtue: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

Q. 58. How do we come to be made partakers of the benefits which Christ has procured?

A. We are made partakers of the benefits which Christ has procured, by the application of them unto us,[260] which is the work especially of God the Holy Ghost.[261]

[260] John 1:11-12. He came unto his own, and his own received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name.

[261] Titus 3:4-7. But after that the kindness and love of God our Savior toward man appeared, Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life. John 16:14-15. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall show it unto you. All things that the Father has are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall show it unto you. See John 3:3-8.

Q. 59. Who are made partakers of redemption through Christ?

A. Redemption is certainly applied, and effectually communicated, to all those for whom Christ has purchased it;[262] who are in time by the Holy Ghost enabled to believe in Christ according to the gospel.[263]

[262] Ephesians 1:13-14. In whom you also trusted, after that you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that you believed, you were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory. John 6:37, 39. All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.... And this is the Father's will which has sent me, that of all which he has given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. John 10:15-16. As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

[263] Romans 10:17. So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. 1 Corinthians 2:12-16. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teaches, but which the Holy Ghost teaches; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. For who has known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ. Ephesians 2:8. For by grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God. Romans 8:9, 14. But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.... For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

Q. 60. Can they who have never heard the gospel, and so know not Jesus Christ, nor believe in him, be saved by their living according to the light of nature?

A. They who, having never heard the gospel,[264] know not Jesus Christ,[265] and believe not in him, cannot be saved,[266] be they never so diligent to frame their lives according to the light of nature,[267] or the laws of that religion which they profess;[268] neither is there salvation in any other, but in Christ alone,[269] who is the Savior only of his body the church.[270]

[264] Romans 10:14. How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

[265] 2 Thessalonians 1:8-9. In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power. Ephesians 2:12. That at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world. John 1:10-12. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his

own, and his own received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name.

[266] John 8:24. I said therefore unto you, that you shall die in your sins: for if you believe not that I am he, you shall die in your sins. John 3:18. He that believes on him is not condemned: but he that believes not is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

[267] 1 Corinthians 1:20-24. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness; But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

[268] John 4:22. you worship you know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. Romans 9:31-32. But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, has not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone. Philippians 3:4-9. Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he has whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more: Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee; Concerning zeal, persecuting the church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless. But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, And be found in him, not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.

[269] Acts 4:12. Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

[270] Ephesians 5:23. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the savior of the body.

Q. 61. Are all they saved who hear the gospel, and live in the church?

A. All that hear the gospel, and live in the visible church, are not saved; but they only who are true members of the church invisible.[271]

[271] John 12:38-40. That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spoke, Lord, who has believed our report? and to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed? Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, He has blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. Romans 9:6. Not as though the word of God has taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel. Matthew 22:14. For many are called, but few are chosen. Matthew 7:21. Not every one that says unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Romans 11:7. What then? Israel has not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election has obtained it, and the rest were blinded. I Corinthians 10:2- 5. And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness.

Q. 62. What is the visible church?

A. The visible church is a society made up of all such as in all ages and places of the world do profess the true religion,[272] and of their children.[273]

[272] 1 Corinthians 1:2. Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours. 1 Corinthians 12:13. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. Romans 15:9-12. And that the Gentiles might glorify God for his mercy; as it is written, For this cause I will confess to you among the Gentiles, and sing unto your name. And again he says, Rejoice, you Gentiles, with his people. And again, Praise the Lord, all you Gentiles; and laud him, all you people. And again, Esaias says, There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles trust. Revelation 7:9. After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands. Psalm 2:8. Ask of me, and I shall give you the heathen for your inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for your possession. Psalm 22:27-31. All the ends of the world shall remember and turn unto the LORD: and all the kindreds of the nations shall worship before thee. For the kingdom is the LORD'S: and he is the governor among the nations. All they that be fat upon earth shall eat and worship: all they that go down to the dust shall bow before him: and none can keep alive his own soul. A seed shall serve him; it shall be accounted to the Lord for a generation. They shall come, and shall declare his righteousness unto a people that shall be born, that he has done this. Psalm 45:17. I will make your name to be remembered in all generations: therefore shall the people praise you for ever and ever. Matthew 28:19-20. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen. Isaiah 59:21. As for me, this is my covenant with them, says the LORD; My spirit that is upon you, and my words which I have put in your mouth, shall not depart out of your mouth, nor out of the mouth of your seed, nor out of the mouth of your seed's seed, says the LORD, from henceforth and for ever.

[273] 1 Corinthians 7:14. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy. Acts 2:39. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call. Romans 11:16. For if the firstfruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches. Genesis 17:7. And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto you, and to your seed after thee.

Q. 63. What are the special privileges of the visible church?

A. The visible church has the privilege of being under God's special care and government;[274] of being protected and preserved in all ages, notwithstanding the opposition of all enemies;[275] and of enjoying the communion of saints, the ordinary means of salvation,[276] and offers of grace by Christ to all the members of it in the ministry of the gospel, testifying, that whosoever believes in him shall be saved,[277] and excluding none that will come unto him.[278]

[274] Isaiah 4:5-6. And the LORD will create upon every dwelling place of mount Zion, and upon her assemblies, a cloud and smoke by day, and the shining of a flaming fire by night: for upon all the glory shall be a defence. And there shall be a tabernacle for a shadow in the day time from the heat, and for a place of refuge, and for a covert from storm and from rain. 1 Timothy 4:10. For therefore we both labor and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Savior of all men, specially of those that believe. Ephesians 4:11-13. And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of

the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ.

[275] Psalm 115:1-2, 9. Not unto us, O LORD, not unto us, but unto your name give glory, for your mercy, and for your truth's sake. Wherefore should the heathen say, Where is now their God?... O Israel, trust you in the LORD: he is their help and their shield. Isaiah 31:4-5. For thus has the LORD spoken unto me, Like as the lion and the young lion roaring on his prey, when a multitude of shepherds is called forth against him, he will not be afraid of their voice, nor abase himself for the noise of them: so shall the LORD of hosts come down to fight for mount Zion, and for the hill of it. As birds flying, so will the LORD of hosts defend Jerusalem; defending also he will deliver it; and passing over he will preserve it. Zechariah 12:2-4, 8-9. Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all the people round about, when they shall be in the siege both against Judah and against Jerusalem. And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it. In that day, says the LORD, I will smite every horse with astonishment, and his rider with madness: and I will open my eyes upon the house of Judah, and will smite every horse of the people with blindness.... In that day shall the LORD defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David; and the house of David shall be as God, as the angel of the LORD before them. And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem. Matthew 16:18. And I say also unto you, That you art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

[276] Acts 2:39, 42. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.... And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. Matthew 28:19-20. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen. I Corinthians 12:12-13. For as the body is one, and has many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

[277] Psalm 147:19-20. He sheweth his word unto Jacob, his statutes and his judgments unto Israel. He has not dealt so with any nation: and as for his judgments, they have not known them. Praise you the LORD. Romans 9:4. Who are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises. Ephesians 4:11-12. And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ. Acts 22:16. And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord. Acts 2:21. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved. See Joel 2:32. Romans 10:10-13, 17. For with the heart man believes unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. For the scripture says, Whosoever believes on him shall not be ashamed. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.... So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

[278] Matthew 11:28-29. Come unto me, all you that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and you shall find rest unto your souls. John 6:37. All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

Q. 64. What is the invisible church?

A. The invisible church is the whole number of the elect, that have been, are, or shall be gathered into one under Christ the head.[279]

[279] Ephesians 1:10. That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him. Ephesians 1:22-23. And has put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all. John 10:16. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. John 11:52. And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad. Ephesians 5:23, 27, 32. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the savior of the body.... That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.... This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

Q. 65. What special benefits do the members of the invisible church enjoy by Christ?

A. The members of the invisible church by Christ enjoy union and communion with him in grace and glory.[280]

[280] John 17:21. That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in you, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that you have sent me. Ephesians 2:5-6. Even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved;) And has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus. John 17:24. Father, I will that they also, whom you have given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which you have given me: for you lovedst me before the foundation of the world. 1 John 1:3. That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. John 1:16. And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace. Ephesians 3:16-19. That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that you might be filled with all the fulness of God. Philippians 3:10. That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death. Romans 6:5-6. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

**Q. 66. What is that union which the elect have with Christ?**

*A. The union which the elect have with Christ is the work of God's grace,[281] whereby they are spiritually and mystically, yet really and inseparably, joined to Christ as their head and husband;[282] which is done in their effectual calling.[283]*

[281] Ephesians 2:6-7. And has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

[282] Ephesians 1:22. And has put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church. 1 Corinthians 6:17. But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit. John 10:28. And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. Ephesians 5:23, 30. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the savior of the body.... For we are members of his body, of

his flesh, and of his bones. John 15:5. I am the vine, you are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me you can do nothing. Ephesians 3:17. That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love.

[283] 1 Peter 5:10. But the God of all grace, who has called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that you have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you. 1 Corinthians 1:9. God is faithful, by whom you were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

Q. 67. What is effectual calling?

A. Effectual calling is the work of God's almighty power and grace,[284] whereby (out of his free and special love to his elect, and from nothing in them moving him thereunto)[285] he does, in his accepted time, invite and draw them to Jesus Christ, by his Word and Spirit;[286] savingly enlightening their minds,[287] renewing and powerfully determining their wills,[288] so as they (although in themselves dead in sin) are hereby made willing and able freely to answer his call, and to accept and embrace the grace offered and conveyed in it.[289]

[284] Ezekiel 37:9, 14. Then said he unto me, Prophesy unto the wind, prophesy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus says the Lord GOD; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live.... And shall put my spirit in you, and you shall live, and I shall place you in your own land: then shall you know that I the LORD have spoken it, and performed it, says the LORD. John 5:25. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. Ephesians 1:18-20. The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to usward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places. 2 Timothy 1:8-9. Be not you therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be you partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God; Who has saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began.

[285] Titus 3:4-5. But after that the kindness and love of God our Savior toward man appeared, Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost. Ephesians 2:4-5, 7-9. But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved);.... That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. For by grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. Romans 9:11. For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth. Deuteronomy 9:5. Not for your righteousness, or for the uprightness of your heart, dost you go to possess their land: but for the wickedness of these nations the LORD your God does drive them out from before you, and that he may perform the word which the LORD swore unto your fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

[286] John 3:5. Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost 2 Corinthians 5:20. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be you reconciled to God. 2 Corinthians 6:1-2. We then, as workers together with him, beseech you also that you receive not the grace of God in vain. (For he says, I have heard you in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of

salvation.) John 6:44- 45. No man can come to me, except the Father which has sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that has heard, and has learned of the Father, cometh unto me. Acts 16:14. And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of youratira, which worshipped God, heard us: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul. 2 Thessalonians 2:13-14. But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God has from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

[287] Acts 26:18. To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me. 1 Corinthians 2:10, 12. But God has revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God.... Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. 2 Corinthians 4:6. For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, has shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. Ephesians 1:17-18. That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints.

[288] Ezekiel 11:19. And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh. Ezekiel 36:26-27. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and you shall keep my judgments, and do them. John 6:45. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that has heard, and has learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

[289] Ephesians 2:5. Even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved;) Philippians 2:13. For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure. Deuteronomy 30:6. And the LORD your God will circumcise your heart, and the heart of your seed, to love the LORD your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, that you may live. Isaiah 45:22. Look unto me, and be you saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else. Matthew 11:28-30. Come unto me, all you that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and you shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light. Revelation 22:17. And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

Q. 68. Are the elect only effectually called?

A. All the elect, and they only, are effectually called:[290] although others may be, and often are, outwardly called by the ministry of the Word,[291] and have some common operations of the Spirit;[292] who, for their wilful neglect and contempt of the grace offered to them, being justly left in their unbelief, do never truly come to Jesus Christ.[293]

[290] Acts 13:48. And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.

[291] Matthew 22:14. For many are called, but few are chosen. Acts 8:13, 20-21. Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.... But Peter said unto him, your money perish with you, because you have thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money. You have neither part nor lot in this matter: for your heart is not right in the sight of God.

[292] Matthew 7:22. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in your name? and in your name have cast out devils? and in your name done many wonderful works? Matthew 13:20-21. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; Yet has he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended. Hebrews 6:4-6. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

[293] John 12:38-40. That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spoke, Lord, who has believed our report? and to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed? Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, He has blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. Acts 28:25-27. And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spoke the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers, Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing you shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing you shall see, and not perceive: For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. John 6:64-65. But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him. And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father. Psalm 81:11- 12. But my people would not hearken to my voice; and Israel would none of me. So I gave them up unto their own hearts' lust: and they walked in their own counsels. Hebrews 10:29. Of how much sorcer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and has done despite unto the Spirit of grace? I John 2:19. They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

Q. 69. What is the communion in grace which the members of the invisible church have with Christ?

A. The communion in grace which the members of the invisible church have with Christ, is their partaking of the virtue of his mediation, in their justification,[294] adoption,[295] sanctification, and whatever else, in this life, manifests their union with him.[296]

[294] Romans 8:30. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

[295] Ephesians 1:5. Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will.

[296] 1 Corinthians 1:30. But of him are you in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption. 1 Corinthians 6:11. And such were some of you: but you are washed, but you are sanctified, but you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

Q. 70. What is justification?

A. Justification is an act of God's free grace unto sinners,[297] in which he pardoneth all their sins, accepteth and accounteth their persons righteous in his sight;[298] not for any thing wrought

in them, or done by them,[299] but only for the perfect obedience and full satisfaction of Christ, by God imputed to them,[300] and received by faith alone.[301]

[297] Romans 3:22, 24-25. Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference.... Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God. Romans 4:5. But to him that worketh not, but believes on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

[298] Jeremiah 23:6. In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name whereby he shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS. Romans 4:6-8. Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin. 2 Corinthians 5:19, 21. To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and has committed unto us the word of reconciliation.... For he has made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him. Romans 3:22, 24-25, 27-28. Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference.... Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.... Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

[299] Titus 3:5, 7. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost.... That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life. Ephesians 1:7. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace.

[300] Romans 4:6-8, 11. Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.... And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also. Romans 5:17-19. For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

[301] Acts 10:43. To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believes in him shall receive remission of sins. Galatians 2:16. Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. Philippians 3:9. And be found in him, not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.

Q. 71. How is justification an act of God's free grace?

A. Although Christ, by his obedience and death, did make a proper, real, and full satisfaction to God's justice in the behalf of them that are justified;[302] yet in as much as God accepteth the

satisfaction from a surety, which he might have demanded of them, and did provide this surety, his own only Son,[303] imputing his righteousness to them,[304] and requiring nothing of them for their justification but faith,[305] which also is his gift,[306] their justification is to them of free grace.[307]

[302] Romans 5:8-10, 19. But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.... For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

[303] 1 Timothy 2:5-6. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time. Hebrews 10:10. By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. Matthew 20:28. Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many. Daniel 9:24, 26. Seventy weeks are determined upon your people and upon your holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.... And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end of it shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. Isaiah 53:4-6, 10-12. Surely he has borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chaviseement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all.... Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he has put him to grief: when you shall make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he has poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors. Hebrews 7:22. By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament. Romans 8:32. He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? 1 Peter 1:18-19. Forasmuch as you know that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

[304] 2 Corinthians 5:21. For he has made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him. Romans 4:6, 11. Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works.... And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also.

[305] Romans 3:24-25. Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.

[306] Ephesians 2:8. For by grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God.

[307] Ephesians 1:7. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace. Romans 3:24-25. Being justified freely by his grace through

the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.

Q. 72. What is justifying faith?

A. Justifying faith is a saving grace,[308] wrought in the heart of a sinner by the Spirit[309] and Word of God,[310] whereby he, being convinced of his sin and misery, and of the disability in himself and all other creatures to recover him out of his lost condition,[311] not only assenteth to the truth of the promise of the gospel,[312] but receiveth and resteth upon Christ and his righteousness, in it held forth, for pardon of sin,[313] and for the accepting and accounting of his person righteous in the sight of God for salvation.[314]

[308] Hebrews 10:39. But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul.

[309] 2 Corinthians 4:13. We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak. Ephesians 1:17-19. That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power. 1 Corinthians 12:3. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. 1 Peter 1:2. Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.

[310] Romans 10:14-17. How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias says, Lord, who has believed our report? So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. 1 Corinthians 1:21. For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.

[311] Acts 2:37. Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? Acts 16:30. And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? John 16:8-9. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: Of sin, because they believe not on me. Romans 6:6. Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. Ephesians 2:1. And you has he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins. Acts 4:12. Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

[312] Ephesians 1:13. In whom you also trusted, after that you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that you believed, you were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise. Hebrews 11:13. These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

[313] John 1:12. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name. Acts 16:31. And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you shall be saved, and your house. Acts 10:43. To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believes in him shall receive remission of sins.

Zechariah 3:8-9. Hear now, O Joshua the high priest, thou, and your fellows that sit before thee: for they are men wondered at: for, behold, I will bring forth my servant the BRANCH. For behold the stone that I have laid before Joshua; upon one stone shall be seven eyes: behold, I will engrave the graving of it, says the LORD of hosts, and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day.

[314] Philippians 3:9. And be found in him, not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith. Acts 15:11. But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they.

Q. 73. How does faith justify a sinner in the sight of God?

A. Faith justifies a sinner in the sight of God, not because of those other graces which do always accompany it, or of good works that are the fruits of it,[315] nor as if the grace of faith, or any act of it, were imputed to him for his justification;[316] but only as it is an instrument by which he receiveth and applieth Christ and his righteousness.[317]

[315] Galatians 3:11. But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith. Romans 3:28. Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

[316] Romans 4:5. But to him that worketh not, but believes on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. Romans 10:10. For with the heart man believes unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

[317] John 1:12. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name. Philippians 3:9. And be found in him, not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith. Galatians 2:16. Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

Q. 74. What is adoption?

A. Adoption is an act of the free grace of God,[318] in and for his only Son Jesus Christ,[319] whereby all those that are justified are received into the number of his children,[320] have his name put upon them,[321] the Spirit of his Son given to them,[322] are under his fatherly care and dispensations,[323] admitted to all the liberties and privileges of the sons of God, made heirs of all the promises, and fellow-heirs with Christ in glory.[324]

[318] 1 John 3:1. Behold, what manner of love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

[319] Ephesians 1:5. Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will. Galatians 4:4-5. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

[320] John 1:12. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name. Romans 8:15-16. For you have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but you have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:

[321] Numbers 6:24-27. The LORD bless you, and keep thee: The LORD make his face shine upon you, and be gracious unto thee: The LORD lift up his countenance upon you, and give you peace. And they shall put my name upon the children of Israel, and I will bless them. Amos 9:12. That they may possess the remnant of Edom, and of all the heathen, which are called by my name, says the LORD that doeth this. 2 Corinthians 6:18. And will be a Father unto you, and you shall be my sons and daughters, says the Lord Almighty. Revelation 3:12. Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

[322] Galatians 4:6. And because you are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

[323] Psalm 103:13. Like as a father pitieth his children, so the LORD pitieth them that fear him. Proverbs 14:26. In the fear of the LORD is strong confidence: and his children shall have a place of refuge. Matthew 6:32. (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek;) for your heavenly Father knoweth that you have need of all these things. Hebrews 12:5-7, 11. And you have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not you the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when you art rebuked of him: For whom the Lord loves he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. If you endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?... Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

[324] Hebrews 6:12. That you be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises. Romans 8:17. And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together. 1 Peter 1:3-4. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy has begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,

Q. 75. What is sanctification?

A. Sanctification is a work of God's grace, whereby they whom God has, before the foundation of the world, chosen to be holy, are in time, through the powerful operation of his Spirit[325] applying the death and resurrection of Christ unto them,[326] renewed in their whole man after the image of God;[327] having the seeds of repentance unto life, and all other saving graces, put into their hearts,[328] and those graces so stirred up, increased, and strengthened,[329] as that they more and more die unto sin, and rise unto newness of life.[330]

[325] Ezekiel 36:27. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and you shall keep my judgments, and do them. Philippians 2:13. For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure. 2 Thessalonians 2:13. But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God has from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth. Ephesians 1:4. According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love. 1 Corinthians 6:11. And such were some of you: but you are washed, but you are sanctified, but you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

[326] Romans 6:4-6. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. Colossians 3:1-3. If you then be

risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. For you are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. Philippians 3:10. That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death.

[327] 2 Corinthians 5:17. Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. Ephesians 4:23-24. And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that you put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness. 1 Thessalonians 5:23. And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

[328] Acts 11:18. When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then has God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life. 1 John 3:9. Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

[329] Jude 20. But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost. Hebrews 6:11-12. And we desire that every one of you do show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end: That you be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises. Ephesians 3:16-19. That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that you might be filled with all the fulness of God. Colossians 1:10-11. That you might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness.

[330] Ezekiel 36:25-27. Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and you shall be clean: from all your filious, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and you shall keep my judgments, and do them. Romans 6:4, 6, 12- 14. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.... Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.... Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in the lusts of it. Neither yield you your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for you are not under the law, but under grace. 2 Corinthians 7:1. Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filious of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God. 1 Peter 2:24. Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes you were healed. Galatians 5:24. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.

Q. 76. What is repentance unto life?

A. Repentance unto life is a saving grace,[331] wrought in the heart of a sinner by the Spirit[332] and Word of God,[333] whereby, out of the sight and sense, not only of the danger,[334] but also of the filious and odiousness of his sins,[335] and upon the apprehension of God's mercy in Christ to such as are penitent,[336] he so grieves for[337] and hates his sins,[338] as that he turns from them all to God,[339] purposing and endeavouring constantly to walk with him in all the ways of new obedience.[340]

[331] 2 Timothy 2:25. In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth. Acts 11:18. When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then has God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

[332] Zechariah 12:10. And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.

[333] Acts 11:18, 20-21. When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then has God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.... And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, which, when they were come to Antioch, spoke unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus. And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

[334] Ezekiel 18:28, 30, 32. Because he considereth, and turneth away from all his transgressions that he has committed, he shall surely live, he shall not die.... Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, says the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin.... For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, says the Lord GOD: wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye. Luke 15:17-18. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee. Hosea 2:6-7. Therefore, behold, I will hedge up your way with thorns, and make a wall, that she shall not find her paths. And she shall follow after her lovers, but she shall not overtake them; and she shall seek them, but shall not find them: then shall she say, I will go and return to my first husband; for then was it better with me than now.

[335] Ezekiel 36:31. Then shall you remember your own evil ways, and your doings that were not good, and shall loathe yourselves in your own sight for your iniquities and for your abominations. Isaiah 30:22. you shall defile also the covering of your graven images of silver, and the ornament of your molten images of gold: you shall cast them away as a menstrual cloth; you shall say unto it, Get you hence. Philippians 3:7-8. But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ.

[336] Joel 2:12-13. Therefore also now, says the LORD, turn you even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the LORD your God: for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil. Psalm 51:1-4. Have mercy upon me, O God, according to your lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of your tender mercies blot out my transgressions. Wash me thoroughly from my iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin. For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin is ever before me. Against you, you only, have I sinned, and done this evil in your sight: that you mightest be justified when you speakest, and be clear when you judgest. Luke 15:7, 10. I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.... Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth. Acts 2:37. Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?

[337] Jeremiah 31:18-19. I have surely heard Ephraim bemoaning himself thus; You have chasteised me, and I was chasteised, as a bullock unaccustomed to the yoke: turn you me, and I shall be turned; for you art the LORD my God. Surely after that I was turned, I repented; and after that I was instructed, I smote upon my thigh: I was ashamed, yea, even confounded, because I

did bear the reproach of my youth. Psalm 32:5. I acknowledged my sin unto you, and my iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and you forgave the iniquity of my sin.

[338] 2 Corinthians 7:11. For behold this selfsame thing, that you sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things you have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

[339] Luke 1:16-17. And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. 1 Thessalonians 1:9. For they themselves show of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God. Acts 26:18. To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me. Ezekiel 14:6. Therefore say unto the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord GOD; Repent, and turn yourselves from your idols; and turn away your faces from all your abominations. 1 Kings 8:47-48. Yet if they shall bethink themselves in the land whither they were carried captives, and repent, and make supplication unto you in the land of them that carried them captives, saying, We have sinned, and have done perversely, we have committed wickedness; And so return unto you with all their heart, and with all their soul, in the land of their enemies, which led them away captive, and pray unto you toward their land, which you gave unto their fathers, the city which you have chosen, and the house which I have built for your name.

[340] 2 Chronicles 7:14. If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land. Psalm 119:57-64. You art my portion, O LORD: I have said that I would keep your words. I entreated your favor with my whole heart: be merciful unto me according to your word. I thought on my ways, and turned my feet unto your testimonies. I made havee, and delayed not to keep your commandments. The bands of the wicked have robbed me: but I have not forgotten your law. At midnight I will rise to give thanks unto you because of your righteous judgments. I am a companion of all them that fear you, and of them that keep your precepts. The earth, O LORD, is full of your mercy: teach me your statutes. Matthew 3:8. Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: 2 Corinthians 7:10. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death. Luke 1:6. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

Q. 77. In what do justification and sanctification differ?

A. Although sanctification be inseparably joined with justification,[341] yet they differ, in that God in justification imputeth the righteousness of Christ;[342] in sanctification of his Spirit infuseth grace, and enableth to the exercise of it;[343] in the former, sin is pardoned;[344] in the other, it is subdued:[345] the one does equally free all believers from the revenging wrath of God, and that perfectly in this life, that they never fall into condemnation[346] the other is neither equal in all,[347] nor in this life perfect in any,[348] but growing up to perfection.[349]

[341] 1 Corinthians 6:11. And such were some of you: but you are washed, but you are sanctified, but you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. 1 Corinthians 1:30. But of him are you in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption.

[342] Romans 4:6, 8. Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works.... Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

[343] Ezekiel 36:27. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and you shall keep my judgments, and do them. Hebrews 9:13-14. For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

[344] Romans 3:24-25. Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.

[345] Romans 6:6, 14. Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.... For sin shall not have dominion over you: for you are not under the law, but under grace.

[346] Romans 8:33-34. Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us.

[347] 1 John 2:12-14. I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his name's sake. I write unto you, fathers, because you have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because you have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because you have known the Father. I have written unto you, fathers, because you have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because you are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and you have overcome the wicked one. Hebrews 5:12-14. For when for the time you ought to be teachers, you have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

[348] 1 John 1:8, 10. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.... If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

[349] 2 Corinthians 7:1. Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God. Philippians 3:12-14. Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

Q. 78. Whence ariseth the imperfection of sanctification in believers?

A. The imperfection of sanctification in believers ariseth from the remnants of sin abiding in every part of them, and the perpetual lustings of the flesh against the spirit; whereby they are often foiled with temptations, and fall into many sins,[350] are hindered in all their spiritual services,[351] and their best works are imperfect and defiled in the sight of God.[352]

[350] Romans 7:18, 23. For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.... But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. See Mark 14:66-72. Galatians 2:11-12. But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision.

[351] Hebrews 12:1. Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which does so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us.

[352] Isaiah 64:6. But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away. Exodus 28:38. And it shall be upon Aaron's forehead, that Aaron may bear the iniquity of the holy things, which the children of Israel shall hallow in all their holy gifts; and it shall be always upon his forehead, that they may be accepted before the LORD. Galatians 5:16-18. This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and you shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that you cannot do the things that you would. But if you be led of the Spirit, you are not under the law.

Q. 79. May not true believers, by reason of their imperfections, and the many temptations and sins they are overtaken with, fall away from the state of grace?

A. True believers, by reason of the unchangeable love of God,[353] and his decree and covenant to give them perseverance,[354] their inseparable union with Christ,[355] his continual intercession for them,[356] and the Spirit and seed of God abiding in them,[357] can neither totally nor finally fall away from the state of grace,[358] but are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation.[359]

[353] Jeremiah 31:3. The LORD has appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved you with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.

[354] 2 Timothy 2:19. Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity. Hebrews 13:20-21. Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is wellpleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. 2 Samuel 23:5. Although my house be not so with God; yet he has made with me an everlasting covenant, ordered in all things, and sure: for this is all my salvation, and all my desire, although he make it not to grow.

[355] 1 Corinthians 1:8-9. Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that you may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. God is faithful, by whom you were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

[356] Hebrews 7:25. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. Luke 22:32. But I have prayed for you, that your faith fail not: and when you art converted, strengthen your brethren.

[357] 1 John 3:9. Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. 1 John 2:27. But the anointing which you have received of him abideth in you, and you need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teaches you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it has taught you, you shall abide in him.

[358] Jeremiah 32:40. And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me. John 10:28. And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

[359] 1 Peter 1:5. Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

Q. 80. Can true believers be infallibly assured that they are in the estate of grace, and that they shall persevere in it unto salvation?

A. Such as truly believe in Christ, and endeavour to walk in all good conscience before him,[360] may, without extraordinary revelation, by faith grounded upon the truth of God's promises, and by the Spirit enabling them to discern in themselves those graces to which the promises of life are made,[361] and bearing witness with their spirits that they are the children of God,[362] be infallibly assured that they are in the estate of grace, and shall persevere in it unto salvation.[363]

[360] 1 John 2:3. And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. Hebrews 10:19-23. Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, By a new and living way, which he has consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; And having an high priest over the house of God; Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised).

[361] 1 Corinthians 2:12. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. 1 John 3:14, 18-19, 21, 24. We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loves not his brother abideth in death.... My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth. And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.... Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God.... And he that keepeth his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him. And hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he has given us. 1 John 4:13, 16. Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he has given us of his Spirit.... And we have known and believed the love that God has to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. Hebrews 6:11-12. And we desire that every one of you do show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end: That you be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

[362] Romans 8:15-16. For you have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but you have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

[363] 1 John 5:13. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may believe on the name of the Son of God. Hebrews 6:19-20. Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entereth into that within the veil; Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. See 2 Peter 1:5-11.

Q. 81. Are all true believers at all times assured of their present being in the estate of grace, and that they shall be saved?

A. Assurance of grace and salvation not being of the essence of faith,[364] true believers may wait long before they obtain it;[365] and, after the enjoyment of it, may have it weakened and intermittent, through manifold distempers, sins, temptations, and desertions;[366] yet they are never left without such a presence and support of the Spirit of God as keeps them from sinking into utter despair.[367]

[364] Ephesians 1:13. In whom you also trusted, after that you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that you believed, you were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise.

[365] Isaiah 50:10. Who is among you that feareth the LORD, that obeyeth the voice of his servant, that walketh in darkness, and has no light? let him trust in the name of the LORD, and

stay upon his God. Psalm 88:1-3, 6-7, 9-10, 13-15. O LORD God of my salvation, I have cried day and night before thee: Let my prayer come before thee: incline your ear unto my cry; For my soul is full of troubles: and my life draweth nigh unto the grave.... You have laid me in the lowest pit, in darkness, in the deeps. your wrath lieth hard upon me, and you have afflicted me with all your waves. Selah.... My eye mourneth by reason of affliction: LORD, I have called daily upon you, I have stretched out my hands unto thee. Will you show wonders to the dead? shall the dead arise and praise thee? Selah.... But unto you have I cried, O LORD; and in the morning shall my prayer prevent thee. LORD, why castest you off my soul? why hidest you your face from me? I am afflicted and ready to die from my youth up: while I suffer your terrors I am distracted.

[366] Psalm 77:1-12. I cried unto God with my voice, even unto God with my voice; and he gave ear unto me. In the day of my trouble I sought the Lord: my sore ran in the night, and ceased not: my soul refused to be comforted. I remembered God, and was troubled: I complained, and my spirit was overwhelmed. Selah. You holdest my eyes waking: I am so troubled that I cannot speak. I have considered the days of old, the years of ancient times. I call to remembrance my song in the night: I commune with my own heart: and my spirit made diligent search. Will the Lord cast off for ever? and will he be favorable no more? Is his mercy clean gone for ever? does his promise fail for evermore? Has God forgotten to be gracious? has he in anger shut up his tender mercies? Selah. And I said, This is my infirmity: but I will remember the years of the right hand of the most High. I will remember the works of the LORD: surely I will remember your wonders of old. I will meditate also of all your work, and talk of your doings. Psalm 51:8, 12. Make me to hear joy and gladness; that the bones which you have broken may rejoice.... Restore unto me the joy of your salvation; and uphold me with your free spirit. Psalm 31:22. For I said in my havee, I am cut off from before your eyes: nevertheless you hearest the voice of my supplications when I cried unto thee. Psalm 22:1. My God, my God, why have you forsaken me? why art you so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring? Ephesians 4:30. And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby you are sealed unto the day of redemption. Luke 22:31-34. And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan has desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for you, that your faith fail not: and when you art converted, strengthen your brethren. And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with you, both into prison, and to death. And he said, I tell you, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that you shall thrice deny that you know me.

[367] 1 John 3:9. Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. Psalm 73:15, 23. If I say, I will speak thus; behold, I should offend against the generation of your children.... Nevertheless I am continually with thee: you have holden me by my right hand. Isaiah 54:7-10. For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. In a little wrath I hid my face from you for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on you, says the LORD your Redeemer. For this is as the waters of Noah unto me: for as I have sworn that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth; so have I sworn that I would not be wroth with you, nor rebuke thee. For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from you, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, says the LORD that has mercy on thee. I Peter 4:12-14. Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you: But rejoice, inasmuch as you are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed, you may be glad also with exceeding joy. If you be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you.

Q. 82. What is the communion in glory which the members of the invisible church have with Christ?

A. The communion in glory which the members of the invisible church have with Christ, is in this life,[368] immediately after death,[369] and at last perfected at the resurrection and day of judgment.[370]

[368] 2 Corinthians 3:18. But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.

[369] Luke 23:43. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto you, Today shall you be with me in paradise.

[370] 1 Thessalonians 4:17. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

Q. 83. What is the communion in glory with Christ which the members of the invisible church enjoy in this life?

A. The members of the invisible church have communicated to them in this life the firstfruits of glory with Christ, as they are members of him their head, and so in him are interested in that glory which he is fully possessed of:[371] and, as an earnest of it, enjoy the sense of God's love,[372] peace of conscience, joy in the Holy Ghost, and hope of glory:[373] as, on the contrary, sense of God's revenging wrath, horror of conscience, and a fearful expectation of judgment, are to the wicked the beginning of their torments which they shall endure after death.[374]

[371] Ephesians 2:5-6. Even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved;) And has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.

[372] Romans 5:5. And hope makes not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. 2 Corinthians 1:22. Who has also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

[373] Romans 5:1-2. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: By whom also we have access by faith into this grace in which we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. Romans 14:17. For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. 2 Peter 3:18. But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen

[374] Genesis 4:13. And Cain said unto the LORD, My punishment is greater than I can bear. Matthew 27:4. Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see you to that. Hebrews 10:27. But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. Romans 2:9. Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile. Mark 9:44. Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

Q. 84. Shall all men die?

A. Death being threatened as the wages of sin,[375] it is appointed unto all men once to die;[376] for that all have sinned.[377]

[375] Romans 6:23. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

[376] Hebrews 9:27. And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.

[377] Romans 5:12. Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

Q. 85. Death, being the wages of sin, why are not the righteous delivered from death, seeing all their sins are forgiven in Christ?

A. The righteous shall be delivered from death itself at the last day, and even in death are delivered from the sting and curse of it;[378] so that, although they die, yet it is out of God's love,[379] to free them perfectly from sin and misery,[380] and to make them capable of further communion with Christ in glory, which they then enter upon.[381]

[378] 1 Corinthians 15:26, 55-57. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.... O death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Hebrews 2:15. And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. John 11:25-26. Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believes in me shall never die. Believest you this?

[379] Isaiah 57:1-2. The righteous perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart: and merciful men are taken away, none considering that the righteous is taken away from the evil to come. He shall enter into peace: they shall rest in their beds, each one walking in his uprightness. 2 Kings 22:20. Behold therefore, I will gather you unto your fathers, and you shall be gathered into your grave in peace; and your eyes shall not see all the evil which I will bring upon this place. And they brought the king word again.

[380] Revelation 14:13. And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, says the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors; and their works do follow them. Ephesians 5:27. That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

[381] Luke 23:43. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto you, To day shall you be with me in paradise. Philippians 1:23. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better.

Q. 86. What is the communion in glory with Christ, which the members of the invisible church enjoy immediately after death?

A. The communion in glory with Christ, which the members of the invisible church enjoy immediately after death is, in that their souls are then made perfect in holiness,[382] and received into the highest heavens,[383] where they behold the face of God in light and glory,[384] waiting for the full redemption of their bodies,[385] which even in death continue united to Christ,[386] and rest in their graves as in their beds,[387] till at the last day they be again united to their souls.[388] Whereas the souls of the wicked are at their death cast into hell, where they remain in torments and utter darkness, and their bodies kept in their graves, as in their prisons, till the resurrection and judgment of the great day.[389]

[382] Hebrews 12:23. To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect. Acts 7:55, 59. But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God.... And they stoned Stephen, as he was calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

[383] 2 Corinthians 5:1, 6, 8. For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.... Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, while we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord.... We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord. Philippians 1:23. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better. Acts 3:21. Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all his holy

prophets since the world began. Ephesians 4:10. He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things. Luke 23:43. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto you, To day shall you be with me in paradise.

[384] 1 John 3:2. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it does not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is. 1 Corinthians 13:12. For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

[385] Romans 8:23. And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body. Psalm 16:9. Therefore my heart is glad, and my glory rejoices: my flesh also shall rest in hope.

[386] 1 Thessalonians 4:14, 16. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him.... For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.

[387] Isaiah 57:2. He shall enter into peace: they shall rest in their beds, each one walking in his uprightness.

[388] Job 19:26-27. And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God: Whom I shall see for myself, and my eyes shall behold, and not another; though my reins be consumed within me.

[389] Luke 16:23-24. And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. Acts 1:25. That he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place. Jude 6-7. And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

Q. 87. What are we to believe concerning the resurrection?

A. We are to believe that at the last day there shall be a general resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust:[390] when they that are then found alive shall in a moment be changed; and the selfsame bodies of the dead which were laid in the grave, being then again united to their souls forever, shall be raised up by the power of Christ.[391] The bodies of the just, by the Spirit of Christ, and by virtue of his resurrection as their head, shall be raised in power, spiritual, incorruptible, and made like to his glorious body;[392] and the bodies of the wicked shall be raised up in dishonor by him, as an offended judge.[393]

[390] Daniel 12:2. And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt. Acts 24:15. And have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.

[391] Job 19:26. And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God. 1 Corinthians 15:51-53. Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. 1 Thessalonians 4:15-17. For

this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. John 5:28-29. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. Romans 8:11. But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

[392] 1 Corinthians 15:21-23, 42-44. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming.... So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. Philippians 3:21. Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

[393] John 5:27-29. And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. Matthew 25:33. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

Q. 88. What shall immediately follow after the resurrection?

A. Immediately after the resurrection shall follow the general and final judgment of angels and men;[394] the day and hour whereof no man knoweth, that all may watch and pray, and be ever ready for the coming of the Lord.[395]

[394] Ecclesiastes 12:14. For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it is evil. 2 Peter 2:4, 6-7, 14-15. For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment.... And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked.... Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children: Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness. Matthew 25:46. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal. 2 Corinthians 5:10. For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he has done, whether it is good or bad. Romans 14:10, 12. But why dost you judge your brother? or why dost you set at nought your brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.... So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

[395] Matthew 24:36, 42, 44. But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.... Watch therefore: for you know not what hour your Lord does come.... Therefore be you also ready: for in such an hour as you think not the Son of man cometh. Mark 13:35-37. Watch you therefore: for you know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cockcrowing, or in the morning: Lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping. And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.

Q. 89. What shall be done to the wicked at the day of judgment?

A. At the day of judgment, the wicked shall be set on Christ's left hand,[396] and, upon clear evidence, and full conviction of their own consciences,[397] shall have the fearful but just sentence of condemnation pronounced against them;[398] and thereupon shall be cast out from the favorable presence of God, and the glorious fellowship with Christ, his saints, and all his holy angels, into hell, to be punished with unspeakable torments, both of body and soul, with the devil and his angels forever.[399]

[396] Matthew 25:33. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

[397] Romans 2:15-16. Which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;) In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.

[398] Matthew 25:41-43. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was an hungered, and you gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and you gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and you took me not in: naked, and you clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and you visited me not.

[399] Luke 16:26. And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence. 2 Thessalonians 1:8-9. In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power.

Q. 90. What shall be done to the righteous at the day of judgment?

A. At the day of judgment, the righteous, being caught up to Christ in the clouds,[400] shall be set on his right hand, and there openly acknowledged and acquitted,[401] shall join with him in the judging of reprobate angels and men,[402] and shall be received into heaven,[403] where they shall be fully and forever freed from all sin and misery;[404] filled with inconceivable joys,[405] made perfectly holy and happy both in body and soul, in the company of innumerable saints and holy angels,[406] but especially in the immediate vision and fruition of God the Father, of our Lord Jesus Christ, and of the Holy Spirit, to all eternity.[407] And this is the perfect and full communion, which the members of the invisible church shall enjoy with Christ in glory, at the resurrection and day of judgment.

[400] 1 Thessalonians 4:17. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. 1 Corinthians 15:42-43. So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power.

[401] Matthew 25:33. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Matthew 10:32. Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. Romans 2:6, 7, 13, 16. Who will render to every man according to his deeds: To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life:...For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.... In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.

[402] 1 Corinthians 6:2-3. Do you not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are you unworthy to judge the smallest matters? Know you not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

[403] Matthew 25:34, 46. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, you blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.... And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

[404] Ephesians 5:27. That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. Revelation 14:13. And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, says the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors; and their works do follow them.

[405] Psalm 16:11. You will show me the path of life: in your presence is fulness of joy; at your right hand there are pleasures for evermore.

[406] Hebrews 12:22-23. But you are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect.

[407] 1 John 3:2. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it does not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is. Romans 8:29. For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. 1 Corinthians 13:12. For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known. 1 Thessalonians 4:17-18. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.

**HAVING SEEN WHAT THE SCRIPTURES PRINCIPALLY TEACH US TO BELIEVE CONCERNING GOD, IT FOLLOWS TO CONSIDER WHAT THEY REQUIRE AS THE DUTY OF MAN.**

Q. 91. What is the duty which God requireth of man?

A. The duty which God requireth of man, is obedience to his revealed will.[408]

[408] Deuteronomy 29:29. The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law. Micah 6:8. He has showed you, O man, what is good; and what does the LORD require of you, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with your God? 1 John 5:2-3. By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments. For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous. Romans 12:1-2. I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be you transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. 1 Samuel 15:22. And Samuel said, Has the LORD as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the LORD? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams.

Q. 92. What did God at first reveal unto man as the rule of his obedience?

A. The rule of obedience revealed to Adam in the estate of innocence, and to all mankind in him, besides a special command not to eat of the fruit of the tree knowledge of good and evil, was the moral law.[409]

[409] Genesis 1:26-27. And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. Romans 2:14-15. For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: Which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another. Romans 10:5. For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them. Genesis 2:17. But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eatest of it you shall surely die.

Q. 93. What is the moral law?

A. The moral law is the declaration of the will of God to mankind, directing and binding every one to personal, perfect, and perpetual conformity and obedience thereunto, in the frame and disposition of the whole man, soul and body,[410] and in performance of all those duties of holiness and righteousness which he oweth to God and man:[411] promising life upon the fulfilling, and threatening death upon the breach of it.[412]

[410] Deuteronomy 5:1-3, 31, 33. And Moses called all Israel, and said unto them, Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day, that you may learn them, and keep, and do them. The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. The LORD made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us, who are all of us here alive this day.... But as for you, stand you here by me, and I will speak unto you all the commandments, and the statutes, and the judgments, which you shall teach them, that they may do them in the land which I give them to possess it.... you shall walk in all the ways which the LORD your God has commanded you, that you may live, and that it may be well with you, and that you may prolong your days in the land which you shall possess. Luke 10:26-27. He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answering said, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as yourself. 1 Thessalonians 5:23. And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. Ephesians 4:24. And that you put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

[411] Luke 1:75. In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life. Acts 24:16. And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men. 1 Peter 1:15-16. But as he which has called you is holy, so be you holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, Be you holy; for I am holy.

[412] Romans 10:5. For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them. Galatians 3:10. For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. Galatians 3:12. And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them. Romans 5:12. Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

Q. 94. Is there any use of the moral law to man since the fall?

A. Although no man, since the fall, can attain to righteousness and life by the moral law:[413] yet there is great use of it, as well common to all men, as peculiar either to the unregenerate, or the regenerate.[414]

[413] Romans 8:3. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh.

Galatians 2:16. Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

[414] 1 Timothy 1:8. But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully.

Q. 95. Of what use is the moral law to all men?

A. The moral law is of use to all men, to inform them of the holy nature and the will of God,[415] and of their duty, binding them to walk accordingly;[416] to convince them of their disability to keep it, and of the sinful pollution of their nature, hearts, and lives:[417] to humble them in the sense of their sin and misery,[418] and thereby help them to a clearer sight of the need they have of Christ,[419] and of the perfection of his obedience.[420]

[415] Romans 1:20. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse. Leviticus 11:44- 45. For I am the LORD your God: you shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and you shall be holy; for I am holy: neither shall you defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. For I am the LORD that bringeth you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: you shall therefore be holy, for I am holy. Leviticus 20:7-8. Sanctify yourselves therefore, and be you holy: for I am the LORD your God. And you shall keep my statutes, and do them: I am the LORD which sanctify you. Romans 7:12. Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

[416] Micah 6:8. He has showed you, O man, what is good; and what does the LORD require of you, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with your God? James 2:10-11. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if you commit no adultery, yet if you kill, you art become a transgressor of the law. Romans 1:32. Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

[417] Psalm 19:11-12. Moreover by them is your servant warned: and in keeping of them there is great reward. Who can understand his errors? cleanse you me from secret faults. Romans 3:20. Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. Romans 7:7. What shall we say then? is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, You shall not covet.

[418] Romans 3:9, 23. What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin.... For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

[419] Galatians 3:21-22, 24. Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. But the scripture has concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.... Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

[420] Romans 10:4. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believes.

Q. 96. What particular use is there of the moral law to unregenerate men?

A. The moral law is of use to unregenerate men, to awaken their consciences to flee from wrath to come,[421] and to drive them to Christ;[422] or, upon their continuance in the estate and way of sin, to leave them inexcusable,[423] and under the curse of it.[424]

[421] Psalm 51:13. Then will I teach transgressors your ways; and sinners shall be converted unto thee. 1 Timothy 1:9-11. Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine; According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

[422] Galatians 3:24. Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

[423] Romans 1:20. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse. Romans 2:15. Which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another.

[424] Galatians 3:10. For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

Q. 97. What special use is there of the moral law to the regenerate?

A. Although they that are regenerate, and believe in Christ, be delivered from the moral law as a covenant of works,[425] so as thereby they are neither justified[426] nor condemned;[427] yet, besides the general uses of it common to them with all men, it is of special use, to show them how much they are bound to Christ for his fulfilling it, and enduring the curse of it in their stead, and for their good;[428] and thereby to provoke them to more thankfulness,[429] and to express the same in their greater care to conform themselves thereunto as the rule of their obedience.[430]

[425] Romans 6:14. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for you are not under the law, but under grace. Romans 7:4, 6. Wherefore, my brethren, you also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that you should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.... But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead in which we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter. Galatians 4:4-5. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. Colossians 2:13-14. And you, being dead in your trespasses and the uncircumcision of your flesh, He has made alive together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses, having wiped out the handwriting of requirements that was against us, which was contrary to us. And He has taken it out of the way, having nailed it to the cross.

[426] Romans 3:20. Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

[427] Galatians 5:23. Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. Romans 8:1. There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

[428] Romans 7:24-25. O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin. Galatians 3:13-14. Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. Romans 8:3-4. For what the law could not do, in

that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. Acts 13:38-39. Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which you could not be justified by the law of Moses.

[429] Luke 1:68-69, 74-75. Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he has visited and redeemed his people, And has raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David.... That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear, In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life. Colossians 1:12-14. Giving thanks unto the Father, which has made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins. Romans 6:14. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for you are not under the law, but under grace.

[430] Deuteronomy 30:19-20. I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both you and your seed may live: That you may love the LORD your God, and that you may obey his voice, and that you may cleave unto him: for he is your life, and the length of your days: that you may dwell in the land which the LORD sware unto your fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them. Romans 7:22. For I delight in the law of God after the inward man. Romans 12:2. And be not conformed to this world: but be you transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. Titus 2:11-14. For the grace of God that bringeth salvation has appeared to all men, Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Savior Jesus Christ; Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. James 1:25. But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth in it, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

Q. 98. Where is the moral law summarily comprehended?

A. The moral law is summarily comprehended in the ten commandments, which were delivered by the voice of God upon Mount Sinai, and written by him in two tables of stone;[431] and are recorded in the twentieth chapter of Exodus. The four first commandments containing our duty to God, and the other six our duty to man.[432]

[431] Deuteronomy 4:13. And he declared unto you his covenant, which he commanded you to perform, even ten commandments; and he wrote them upon two tables of stone. Deuteronomy 10:4. And he wrote on the tables, according to the first writing, the ten commandments, which the LORD spoke unto you in the mount out of the midst of the fire in the day of the assembly: and the LORD gave them unto me. Exodus 34:1-4. And the LORD said unto Moses, Hew you two tables of stone like unto the first: and I will write upon these tables the words that were in the first tables, which you brakest. And be ready in the morning, and come up in the morning unto mount Sinai, and present yourself there to me in the top of the mount. And no man shall come up with you, neither let any man be seen throughout all the mount; neither let the flocks nor herds feed before that mount. And he hewed two tables of stone like unto the first; and Moses rose up early in the morning, and went up unto mount Sinai, as the LORD had commanded him, and took in his hand the two tables of stone. Romans 13:8-10. Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loves another has fulfilled the law. For this, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not kill, You shall not steal, You shall not bear false witness, You shall not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. Love worketh no ill to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law. James 2:8, 10-12. If you fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, You shall love your neighbor as

yourself, you do well.... For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if you commit no adultery, yet if you kill, you art become a transgressor of the law. So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

[432] Matthew 22:37-40. Jesus said unto him, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. Matthew 19:17-19. And he said unto him, Why callest you me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if you will enter into life, keep the commandments. He says unto him, Which? Jesus said, You shall do no murder, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not steal, You shall not bear false witness, Honor your father and your mother: and, You shall love your neighbor as yourself.

**Q. 99. What rules are to be observed for the right understanding of the ten commandments?**

*A. For the right understanding of the ten commandments, these rules are to be observed:*

1. That the law is perfect, and bindeth everyone to full conformity in the whole man unto the righteousness of it, and unto entire obedience forever; so as to require the utmost perfection of every duty, and to forbid the least degree of every sin.[433]
2. That it is spiritual, and so reacheth the understanding, will, affections, and all other powers of the soul; as well as words, works, and gestures.[434]
3. That one and the same thing, in diverse respects, is required or forbidden in several commandments.[435]
4. That as, where a duty is commanded, the contrary sin is forbidden;[436] and, where a sin is forbidden, the contrary duty is commanded:[437] so, where a promise is annexed, the contrary threatening is included;[438] and, where a threatening is annexed, the contrary promise is included.[439]
5. That what God forbids, is at no time to be done;[440] what he commands, is always our duty;[441] and yet every particular duty is not to be done at all times.[442]
6. That under one sin or duty, all of the same kind are forbidden or commanded; together with all the causes, means, occasions, and appearances of it, and provocations thereunto.[443]
7. That what is forbidden or commanded to ourselves, we are bound, according to our places to endeavour that it may be avoided or performed by others, according to the duty of their places.[444]
8. That in what is commanded to others, we are bound, according to our places and callings, to be helpful to them;[445] and to take heed of partaking with others in what is forbidden them.[446]

[433] Psalm 19:7. The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple. James 2:10. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. Matthew 5:21-22. you have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.

[434] Romans 7:14. For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. Deuteronomy 6:5. And you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your might. Matthew 22:37-39. Jesus said unto him, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. Matthew 5:21-22, 27-28, 33-34, 37-39, 43-44. you have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.... you have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart.... Again, you have heard that it has been said by them of old time, You shall not forswear yourself, but shall perform unto the Lord your oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne.... But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatever is more than these cometh of evil. you have heard that it has been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That you resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite you on your right cheek, turn to him the other also.... you have heard that it has been said, You shall love your neighbor, and hate your enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you.

[435] Colossians 3:5. Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry. Amos 8:5. Saying, When will the new moon be gone, that we may sell corn? and the sabbath, that we may set forth wheat, making the ephah small, and the shekel great, and falsifying the balances by deceit? Proverbs 1:19. So are the ways of every one that is greedy of gain; which taketh away the life of the owners of it. 1 Timothy 6:10. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

[436] Isaiah 58:13. If you turn away your foot from the sabbath, from doing your pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the LORD, honorable; and shall honor him, not doing your own ways, nor finding your own pleasure, nor speaking your own words. Deuteronomy 6:13. You shall fear the LORD your God, and serve him, and shall swear by his name. Matthew 4:9-10. And says unto him, All these things will I give you, if you will fall down and worship me. Then says Jesus unto him, Get you hence, Satan: for it is written, You shall worship the Lord your God, and him only shall you serve. Matthew 15:4-6. For God commanded, saying, Honor your father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But you say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatever you mightest be profited by me; And honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have you made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.

[437] Matthew 5:21-25. you have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there rememberest that your brother has ought against thee; Leave there your gift before the altar, and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift. Agree with your adversary quickly, whiles you art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and you be cast into prison. Ephesians 4:28. Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labor, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.

[438] Exodus 20:12. Honor your father and your mother: that your days may be long upon the land which the LORD your God giveth thee. Proverbs 30:17. The eye that mocketh at his father,

and despiseth to obey his mother, the ravens of the valley shall pick it out, and the young eagles shall eat it.

[439] Jeremiah 18:7-8. At what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to pluck up, and to pull down, and to destroy it; If that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them. Exodus 20:7. You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain. Psalm 15:1, 4-5. LORD, who shall abide in your tabernacle? who shall dwell in your holy hill?... In whose eyes a vile person is contemned; but he honoreth them that fear the LORD. He that sweareth to his own hurt, and changeth not. He that putteth not out his money to usury, nor taketh reward against the innocent. He that doeth these things shall never be moved. Psalm 24:4-5. He that has clean hands, and a pure heart; who has not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully. He shall receive the blessing from the LORD, and righteousness from the God of his salvation.

[440] Job 13:7-8. Will you speak wickedly for God? and talk deceitfully for him? Will you accept his person? will you contend for God? Romans 3:8. And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just. Job 36:21. Take heed, regard not iniquity: for this have you chosen rather than affliction. Hebrews 11:25. Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season.

[441] Deuteronomy 4:8-9. And what nation is there so great, that has statutes and judgments so righteous as all this law, which I set before you this day? Only take heed to yourself, and keep your soul diligently, lest you forget the things which your eyes have seen, and lest they depart from your heart all the days of your life: but teach them your sons, and your sons' sons. Luke 17:10. So likewise ye, when you shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

[442] Matthew 12:7. But if you had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, you would not have condemned the guiltless.

[443] Matthew 5:21-22, 27-28. you have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.... you have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart. Matthew 15:4-6. For God commanded, saying, Honor your father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But you say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatever you mightest be profited by me; And honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have you made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. 1 Thessalonians 5:22. Abstain from all appearance of evil. Jude 23. And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh. Galatians 5:26. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another. Colossians 3:21. Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

[444] Exodus 20:10. But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD your God: in it you shall not do any work, thou, nor your son, nor your daughter, your manservant, nor your maidservant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger that is within your gates. Leviticus 19:17. You shall not hate your brother in your heart: you shall in any wise rebuke your neighbor, and not suffer sin upon him. Genesis 18:19. For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the LORD, to do justice and judgment; that the LORD may bring upon Abraham that which he has spoken of him. Joshua 24:15. And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom you will serve; whether the gods which your fathers

served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land you dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD. Deuteronomy 6:6-7. And these words, which I command you this day, shall be in your heart: And you shall teach them diligently unto your children, and shall talk of them when you sittest in your house, and when you walkest by the way, and when you liest down, and when you risest up. Hebrews 10:24-25. And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works: Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as you see the day approaching.

[445] 2 Corinthians 1:24. Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith you stand.

[446] 1 Timothy 5:22. Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep yourself pure. Ephesians 5:11. And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

Q. 100. What special things are we to consider in the ten commandments?

A. We are to consider in the ten commandments, the preface, the substance of the commandments themselves, and several reasons annexed to some of them, the more to enforce them.[447]

[447] As an example, Ephesians 6:1-3. Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. Honor your father and mother; (which is the first commandment with promise;) That it may be well with you, and you may live long on the earth.

Q. 101. What is the preface to the ten commandments?

A. The preface to the ten commandments is contained in these words, I am the Lord your God, which have brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.[448] In which God manifesteth his sovereignty, as being JEHOVAH, the eternal, immutable, and almighty God;[449] having his being in and of himself,[450] and giving being to all his words[451] and works:[452] and that he is a God in covenant, as with Israel of old, so with all his people;[453] who, as he brought them out of their bondage in Egypt, so he delivereth us from our spiritual thralldom;[454] and that therefore we are bound to take him for our God alone, and to keep all his commandments.[455]

[448] Exodus 20:2. I am the LORD your God, which have brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:6.

[449] Isaiah 44:6. Thus says the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God.

[450] Exodus 3:14. And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shall you say unto the children of Israel, I AM has sent me unto you.

[451] Exodus 6:3. And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of God Almighty, but by my name JEHOVAH was I not known to them.

[452] Acts 17:24, 28. God that made the world and all things in it, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands.... For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. [453] Genesis 17:7. And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto you, and to your seed after thee. Romans 3:29. Is he the God of the Jews only? is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also.

[454] Luke 1:74-75. That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear, In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life. Galatians 5:1. Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ has made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

[455] 1 Peter 1:15-19. But as he which has called you is holy, so be you holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, Be you holy; for I am holy. And if you call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear: Forasmuch as you know that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot. Leviticus 18:30. Therefore shall you keep my ordinance, that you commit not any one of these abominable customs, which were committed before you, and that you defile not yourselves in it: I am the LORD your God. Leviticus 19:37. Therefore shall you observe all my statutes, and all my judgments, and do them: I am the LORD.

Q. 102. What is the sum of the four commandments which contain our duty to God?

A. The sum of the four commandments containing our duty to God is, to love the Lord our God with all our heart, and with all our soul, and with all our strength, and with all our mind.[456]

[456] Luke 10:27. And he answering said, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as yourself. Matthew 22:37-40. Jesus said unto him, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment.

Q. 103. Which is the first commandment?

A. The first commandment is, You shall have no other gods before me.[457] [457] Exodus 20:3. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:7.

Q. 104. What are the duties required in the first commandment?

A. The duties required in the first commandment are, the knowing and acknowledging of God to be the only true God, and our God;[458] and to worship and glorify him accordingly,[459] by thinking,[460] meditating,[461] remembering,[462] highly esteeming,[463] honoring,[464] adoring,[465] choosing,[466] loving,[467] desiring,[468] fearing of him;[469] believing him;[470] trusting[471] hoping,[472] delighting,[473] rejoicing in him;[474] being zealous for him;[475] calling upon him, giving all praise and thanks,[476] and yielding all obedience and submission to him with the whole man;[477] being careful in all things to please him,[478] and sorrowful when in any thing he is offended;[479] and walking humbly with him.[480]

[458] 1 Chronicles 28:9. And thou, Solomon my son, know you the God of your father, and serve him with a perfect heart and with a willing mind: for the LORD searches all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if you seek him, he will be found of thee; but if you forsake him, he will cast you off for ever. Deuteronomy 26:7. And when we cried unto the LORD God of our fathers, the LORD heard our voice, and looked on our affliction, and our labor, and our oppression. Isaiah 43:10. you are my witnesses, says the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that you may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me. See Jeremiah 14:22.

[459] Psalm 95:6-7. O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the LORD our maker. For he is our God; and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand. To day if you will hear his voice. Matthew 4:10. Then says Jesus unto him, Get you hence, Satan: for

it is written, You shall worship the Lord your God, and him only shall you serve. Psalm 29:2. Give unto the LORD the glory due unto his name; worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness.

[460] Malachi 3:16. Then they that feared the LORD spoke often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon his name.

[461] Psalm 63:6. When I remember you upon my bed, and meditate on you in the night watches.

[462] Ecclesiastes 12:1. Remember now your Creator in the days of your youth, while the evil days come not, nor the years draw nigh, when you shall say, I have no pleasure in them.

[463] Psalm 71:19. your righteousness also, O God, is very high, who have done great things: O God, who is like unto thee!

[464] Malachi 1:6. A son honoreth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a father, where is my honor? and if I be a master, where is my fear? says the LORD of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And you say, In what have we despised your name?

[465] Isaiah 45:23. I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, That unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear. See Psalm 96.

[466] Joshua 24:15, 22. And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom you will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land you dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.... And Joshua said unto the people, you are witnesses against yourselves that you have chosen you the LORD, to serve him. And they said, We are witnesses.

[467] Deuteronomy 6:5. And you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your might.

[468] Psalm 73:25. Whom have I in heaven but thee? and there is none upon earth that I desire beside thee.

[469] Isaiah 8:13. Sanctify the LORD of hosts himself; and let him be your fear, and let him be your dread.

[470] Exodus 14:31. And Israel saw that great work which the LORD did upon the Egyptians: and the people feared the LORD, and believed the LORD, and his servant Moses.

[471] Isaiah 26:4. Trust you in the LORD for ever: for in the LORD JEHOVAH is everlasting strength.

[472] Psalm 130:7. Let Israel hope in the LORD: for with the LORD there is mercy, and with him is plenteous redemption.

[473] Psalm 37:4. Delight yourself also in the LORD; and he shall give you the desires of your heart.

[474] Psalm 32:11. Be glad in the LORD, and rejoice, you righteous: and shout for joy, all you that are upright in heart.

[475] Romans 12:11. Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord. See Numbers 25:11.

[476] Philippians 4:6. Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.

[477] Jeremiah 7:23. But this thing commanded I them, saying, Obey my voice, and I will be your God, and you shall be my people: and walk you in all the ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you. James 4:7. Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

[478] 1 John 3:22. And whatever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

[479] Psalm 119:136. Rivers of waters run down my eyes, because they keep not your law. Jeremiah 31:18. I have surely heard Ephraim bemoaning himself thus; You have chasteised me, and I was chasteised, as a bullock unaccustomed to the yoke: turn you me, and I shall be turned; for you art the LORD my God.

[480] Micah 6:8. He has showed you, O man, what is good; and what does the LORD require of you, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with your God?

Q. 105. What are the sins forbidden in the first commandment?

A. The sins forbidden in the first commandment are, atheism, in denying or not having a God;[481] idolatry, in having or worshipping more gods than one, or any with or instead of the true God;[482] the not having and avouching him for God, and our God;[483] the omission or neglect of anything due to him, required in this commandment;[484] ignorance,[485] forgetfulness,[486] misapprehensions,[487] false opinions,[488] unworthy and wicked thoughts of him;[489] bold and curious searching into his secrets;[490] all profaneness,[491] hatred of God;[492] self-love,[493] self-seeking,[494] and all other inordinate and immoderate setting of our mind, will, or affections upon other things, and taking them off from him in whole or in part;[495] vain credulity,[496] unbelief,[497] heresy,[498] disbelief,[499] distrust,[500] despair,[501] incorrigibility,[502] and insensibility under judgments,[503] hardness of heart,[504] pride,[505] presumption,[506] carnal security,[507] tempting of God;[508] using unlawful means,[509] and trusting in lawful means;[510] carnal delights and joys;[511] corrupt, blind, and indiscreet zeal;[512] lukewarmness,[513] and deadness in the things of God;[514] estranging ourselves, and apostatizing from God;[515] praying, or giving any religious worship, to saints, angels, or any other creatures;[516] all compacts and consulting with the devil,[517] and hearkening to his suggestions;[518] making men the lords of our faith and conscience;[519] slighting and despising God and his commands;[520] resisting and grieving of his Spirit,[521] discontent and impatience at his dispensations, charging him foolishly for the evils he inflicts on us;[522] and ascribing the praise of any good we either are, have or can do, to fortune,[523] idols,[524] ourselves,[525] or any other creature.[526]

[481] Psalm 14:1. The fool has said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good. Ephesians 2:12. That at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world.

[482] Jeremiah 2:27-28. Saying to a stock, You art my father; and to a stone, You have brought me forth: for they have turned their back unto me, and not their face: but in the time of their trouble they will say, Arise, and save us. But where are your gods that you have made thee? let them arise, if they can save you in the time of your trouble: for according to the number of your cities are your gods, O Judah. 1 Thessalonians 1:9. For they themselves show of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God.

[483] Psalm 81:10-11. I am the LORD your God, which brought you out of the land of Egypt: open your mouth wide, and I will fill it. But my people would not hearken to my voice; and Israel would none of me. See Romans 1:21.

[484] Isaiah 43:22-24. But you have not called upon me, O Jacob; but you have been weary of me, O Israel. You have not brought me the small cattle of your burnt offerings; neither have you honored me with your sacrifices. I have not caused you to serve with an offering, nor wearied you with incense. You have bought me no sweet cane with money, neither have you filled me with the fat of your sacrifices: but you have made me to serve with your sins, you have wearied me with your iniquities.

[485] Jeremiah 4:22. For my people is foolish, they have not known me; they are sottish children, and they have none understanding: they are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge. Hosea 4:1, 6. Hear the word of the LORD, you children of Israel: for the LORD has a controversy with the inhabitants of the land, because there is no truth, nor mercy, nor knowledge of God in the land.... My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because you have rejected knowledge, I will also reject you, that you shall be no priest to me: seeing you have forgotten the law of your God, I will also forget your children.

[486] Jeremiah 2:32. Can a maid forget her ornaments, or a bride her attire? yet my people have forgotten me days without number.

[487] Acts 17:23, 29. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore you ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.... Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device.

[488] Isaiah 40:18. To whom then will you liken God? or what likeness will you compare unto him?

[489] Psalm 50:21. These things have you done, and I kept silence; you thoughtest that I was altogether such an one as yourself: but I will reprove you, and set them in order before your eyes.

[490] Deuteronomy 29:29. The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law.

[491] Titus 1:16. They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate. Hebrews 12:16. Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright.

[492] Romans 1:30. Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents.

[493] 2 Timothy 3:2. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy.

[494] Philippians 2:21. For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's.

[495] 1 John 2:15-16. Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. Colossians 3:2, 5. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth.... Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry. See 1 Samuel 2:29.

[496] 1 John 4:1. Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

[497] Hebrews 3:12. Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

[498] Galatians 5:20. Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies. Titus 3:10. A man that is an heretic after the first and second admonition reject.

[499] Acts 26:9. I verily thought with myself, that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth.

[500] Psalm 78:22. Because they believed not in God, and trusted not in his salvation.

[501] Genesis 4:13. And Cain said unto the LORD, My punishment is greater than I can bear.

[502] Jeremiah 5:3. O LORD, are not your eyes upon the truth? you have stricken them, but they have not grieved; you have consumed them, but they have refused to receive correction: they have made their faces harder than a rock; they have refused to return.

[503] Isaiah 42:25. Therefore he has poured upon him the fury of his anger, and the strength of battle: and it has set him on fire round about, yet he knew not; and it burned him, yet he laid it not to heart.

[504] Romans 2:5. But after your hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto yourself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God.

[505] Jeremiah 13:15. Hear ye, and give ear; be not proud: for the LORD has spoken.

[506] Psalm 19:13. Keep back your servant also from presumptuous sins; let them not have dominion over me: then shall I be upright, and I shall be innocent from the great transgression.

[507] Zephaniah 1:12. And it shall come to pass at that time, that I will search Jerusalem with candles, and punish the men that are settled on their lees: that say in their heart, The LORD will not do good, neither will he do evil.

[508] Matthew 4:7. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, You shall not tempt the Lord your God.

[509] Romans 3:8. And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just.

[510] Jeremiah 17:5. Thus says the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and makes flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.

[511] 2 Timothy 3:4. Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God.

[512] Galatians 4:17. They zealously affect you, but not well; yea, they would exclude you, that you might affect them. Romans 10:2. For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. See John 16:2; Luke 9:54-55.

[513] Revelation 3:16. So then because you art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue you out of my mouth.

[514] Revelation 3:1. And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things says he that has the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know your works, that you have a name that you livest, and art dead.

[515] Ezekiel 14:5. That I may take the house of Israel in their own heart, because they are all estranged from me through their idols. Isaiah 1:4-5. Ah sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a seed of evildoers, children that are corrupters: they have forsaken the LORD, they have provoked the Holy One of Israel unto anger, they are gone away backward. Why should you be stricken any more? you will revolt more and more: the whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint.

[516] Hosea 4:12. My people ask counsel at their stocks, and their staff declareth unto them: for the spirit of whoredoms has caused them to err, and they have gone a whoring from under their God. Acts 10:25-26. And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him. But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up; I myself also am a man. Revelation 19:10. And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See you do it not: I am your fellowservant, and of your brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy. Matthew 4:10. Then says Jesus unto him, Get you hence, Satan: for it is written, You shall worship the Lord your God, and him only shall you serve. Colossians 2:18. Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he has not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind. Romans 1:25. Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

[517] Leviticus 20:6. And the soul that turneth after such as have familiar spirits, and after wizards, to go a whoring after them, I will even set my face against that soul, and will cut him off from among his people. See 1 Samuel 28:7, 11; 1 Chronicles 10:13-14.

[518] Acts 5:3. But Peter said, Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land?

[519] 2 Corinthians 1:24. Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith you stand. See Matthew 23:9.

[520] Deuteronomy 32:15. But Jeshurun waxed fat, and kicked: you art waxen fat, you art grown thick, you art covered with fatness; then he forsook God which made him, and lightly esteemed the Rock of his salvation. Proverbs 13:13. Whoso despiseth the word shall be destroyed: but he that feareth the commandment shall be rewarded. See 2 Samuel 12:9.

[521] Acts 7:51. you stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, you do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye. Ephesians 4:30. And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby you are sealed unto the day of redemption.

[522] Job 1:22. In all this Job sinned not, nor charged God foolishly. Psalm 73:2-3. But as for me, my feet were almost gone; my steps had nearly slipped. For I was envious at the foolish, when I saw the prosperity of the wicked. See verses 13-15, 22.

[523] 1 Samuel 6:7-9. Now therefore make a new cart, and take two milch kine, on which there has come no yoke, and tie the kine to the cart, and bring their calves home from them: And take the ark of the LORD, and lay it upon the cart; and put the jewels of gold, which you return him for a trespass offering, in a coffer by the side of it; and send it away, that it may go. And see, if it goeth up by the way of his own coast to Bethshemesh, then he has done us this great evil: but if not, then we shall know that it is not his hand that smote us: it was a chance that happened to us. Luke 12:19. And I will say to my soul, Soul, you have much goods laid up for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

[524] Daniel 5:23. But have lifted up yourself against the Lord of heaven; and they have brought the vessels of his house before you, and thou, and your lords, your wives, and your concubines, have drunk wine in them; and you have praised the gods of silver, and gold, of brass, iron, wood,

and stone, which see not, nor hear, nor know: and the God in whose hand your breath is, and whose are all your ways, have you not glorified.

[525] Deuteronomy 8:17. And you say in your heart, My power and the might of my hand has gotten me this wealth. See Daniel 4:30.

[526] Habakkuk 1:16. Therefore they sacrifice unto their net, and burn incense unto their drag; because by them their portion is fat, and their meat plenteous.

Q. 106. What are we specially taught by these words before me in the first commandment?

A. These words before me or before my face, in the first commandment, teach us, that God, who seeth all things, taketh special notice of, and is much displeased with, the sin of having any other God: that so it may be an argument to dissuade from it, and to aggravate it as a most impudent provocation:[527] as also to persuade us to do as in his sight, whatever we do in his service.[528]

[527] Psalm 44:20-21. If we have forgotten the name of our God, or stretched out our hands to a strange god; Shall not God search this out? for he knoweth the secrets of the heart. See Deuteronomy 30:17-18; Ezekiel 8:5-6, 12.

[528] 1 Chronicles 28:9. And thou, Solomon my son, know you the God of your father, and serve him with a perfect heart and with a willing mind: for the LORD searches all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if you seek him, he will be found of thee; but if you forsake him, he will cast you off for ever.

Q. 107. Which is the second commandment?

A. The second commandment is, You shall not make unto you any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. You shall not bow down yourself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord your God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; and showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.[529]

[529] Exodus 20:4-6. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:8-10.

Q. 108. What are the duties required in the second commandment?

A. The duties required in the second commandment are, the receiving, observing, and keeping pure and entire, all such religious worship and ordinances as God has instituted in his Word:[530] particularly prayer and thanksgiving in the name of Christ;[531] the reading, preaching, and hearing of the Word;[532] the administration and receiving of the sacraments;[533] church government and discipline;[534] the ministry and maintainance of it;[535] religious fasting;[536] swearing by the name of God;[537] and vowed unto him;[538] as also the disapproving, detesting, opposing all false worship;[539] and, according to each one's place and calling, removing it, and all monuments of idolatry.[540]

[530] Deuteronomy 12:32. What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: you shall not add thereto, nor diminish from it. Deuteronomy 32:46-47. And he said unto them, Set your hearts unto all the words which I testify among you this day, which you shall command your children to observe to do, all the words of this law. For it is not a vain thing for you; because it is your life: and through this thing you shall prolong your days in the land, whither you go over Jordan to possess it. Matthew 28:20. Teaching them to observe all things whatever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen. 1 Timothy 6:13-14. I give you charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before

Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; That you keep this commandment without spot, unrebutable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. See Acts 2:42.

[531] Philippians 4:6. Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. Ephesians 5:20. Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

[532] Deuteronomy 17:18-19. And it shall be, when he sitteth upon the throne of his kingdom, that he shall write him a copy of this law in a book out of that which is before the priests the Levites: And it shall be with him, and he shall read in it all the days of his life: that he may learn to fear the LORD his God, to keep all the words of this law and these statutes, to do them. Acts 15:21. For Moses of old time has in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath day. 2 Timothy 4:2. Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine. James 1:21-22. Wherefore lay apart all filious and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. But be you doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. Acts 10:33. Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and you have well done that you art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded you of God.

[533] Matthew 28:19. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. See 1 Corinthians 11:23-30.

[534] Matthew 18:15-17. Moreover if your brother shall trespass against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone: if he shall hear you, you have gained your brother. But if he will not hear you, then take with you one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto you as a heathen man and a publican. Matthew 16:19. And I will give unto you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. 1 Corinthians 12:28. And God has set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. See 1 Corinthians 5.

[535] Ephesians 4:11-12. And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ. 1 Timothy 5:17-18. Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially they who labor in the word and doctrine. For the scripture says, You shall not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn. And, The laborer is worthy of his reward. See 1 Corinthians 9:7-15.

[536] Joel 2:12-13. Therefore also now, says the LORD, turn you even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the LORD your God: for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil. 1 Corinthians 7:5. Defraud you not one the other, except it is with consent for a time, that you may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

[537] Deuteronomy 6:13. You shall fear the LORD your God, and serve him, and shall swear by his name.

[538] Psalm 76:11. Vow, and pay unto the LORD your God: let all that be round about him bring presents unto him that ought to be feared. Isaiah 19:21. And the LORD shall be known to Egypt, and the Egyptians shall know the LORD in that day, and shall do sacrifice and oblation; yea, they shall vow a vow unto the LORD, and perform it. See Psalm 116:14, 18.

[539] Acts 17:16-17. Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city wholly given to idolatry. Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him. Psalm 16:4. Their sorrows shall be multiplied that hasten after another god: their drink offerings of blood will I not offer, nor take up their names into my lips.

[540] Deuteronomy 7:5. But thus shall you deal with them; you shall destroy their altars, and break down their images, and cut down their groves, and burn their graven images with fire. Isaiah 30:22. you shall defile also the covering of your graven images of silver, and the ornament of your molten images of gold: you shall cast them away as a menstrual cloth; you shall say unto it, Get you hence.

Q. 109. What are the sins forbidden in the second commandment?

A. The sins forbidden in the second commandment are, all devising,[541] counselling,[542] commanding,[543] using,[544] and anywise approving, any religious worship not instituted by God himself;[545] the making any representation of God, of all or of any of the three persons, either inwardly in our mind, or outwardly in any kind of image or likeness of any creature whatever;[546] all worshipping of it,[547] or God in it or by it;[548] the making of any representation of feigned deities,[549] and all worship of them, or service belonging to them,[550] all superstitious devices,[551] corrupting the worship of God,[552] adding to it, or taking from it,[553] whether invented and taken up of ourselves,[554] or received by tradition from others,[555] though under the title of antiquity,[556] custom,[557] devotion,[558] good intent, or any other pretence whatever;[559] simony;[560] sacrilege;[561] all neglect,[562] contempt,[563] hindering,[564] and opposing the worship and ordinances which God has appointed.[565].

[541] Numbers 15:39. And it shall be unto you for a fringe, that you may look upon it, and remember all the commandments of the LORD, and do them; and that you seek not after your own heart and your own eyes, after which you use to go a whoring.

[542] Deuteronomy 13:6-8. If your brother, the son of your mother, or your son, or your daughter, or the wife of your bosom, or your friend, which is as your own soul, entice you secretly, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which you have not known, thou, nor your fathers; Namely, of the gods of the people which are round about you, nigh unto you, or far off from you, from the one end of the earth even unto the other end of the earth; You shall not consent unto him, nor hearken unto him; neither shall your eye pity him, neither shall you spare, neither shall you conceal him.

[543] Hosea 5:11. Ephraim is oppressed and broken in judgment, because he willingly walked after the commandment. Micah 6:16. For the statutes of Omri are kept, and all the works of the house of Ahab, and you walk in their counsels; that I should make you a desolation, and the inhabitants of it an hissing: therefore you shall bear the reproach of my people.

[544] 1 Kings 11:33. Because that they have forsaken me, and have worshipped Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, Chemosh the god of the Moabites, and Milcom the god of the children of Ammon, and have not walked in my ways, to do that which is right in my eyes, and to keep my statutes and my judgments, as did David his father. 1 Kings 12:33. So he offered upon the altar which he had made in Bethel the fifteenth day of the eighth month, even in the month which he had devised of his own heart; and ordained a feast unto the children of Israel: and he offered upon the altar, and burnt incense.

[545] Deuteronomy 12:30-32. Take heed to yourself that you be not snared by following them, after that they be destroyed from before thee; and that you inquire not after their gods, saying, How did these nations serve their gods? even so will I do likewise. You shall not do so unto the LORD your God: for every abomination to the LORD, which he hateth, have they done unto their gods; for even their sons and their daughters they have burnt in the fire to their gods. What thing

soever I command you, observe to do it: you shall not add thereto, nor diminish from it. Leviticus 10:1-2. And Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, took either of them his censer, and put fire in it, and put incense thereon, and offered strange fire before the LORD, which he commanded them not. And there went out fire from the LORD, and devoured them, and they died before the LORD. Jeremiah 19:5. They have built also the high places of Baal, to burn their sons with fire for burnt offerings unto Baal, which I commanded not, nor spoke it, neither came it into my mind:

[546] Deuteronomy 4:15-16. Take you therefore good heed unto yourselves; for you saw no manner of similitude on the day that the LORD spoke unto you in Horeb out of the midst of the fire: Lest you corrupt yourselves, and make you a graven image, the similitude of any figure, the likeness of male or female. See verses 17-19. Acts 17:29. Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. Romans 1:21-23, 25. Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.... Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

[547] Galatians 4:8. Howbeit then, when you knew not God, you did service unto them which by nature are no gods. See Daniel 3:18.

[548] Exodus 32:5. And when Aaron saw it, he built an altar before it; and Aaron made proclamation, and said, To morrow is a feast to the LORD.

[549] Exodus 32:8. They have turned aside quickly out of the way which I commanded them: they have made them a molten calf, and have worshipped it, and have sacrificed thereunto, and said, These be your gods, O Israel, which have brought you up out of the land of Egypt.

[550] 1 Kings 18:26, 28. And they took the bullock which was given them, and they dressed it, and called on the name of Baal from morning even until noon, saying, O Baal, hear us. But there was no voice, nor any that answered. And they leaped upon the altar which was made.... And they cried aloud, and cut themselves after their manner with knives and lancets, till the blood gushed out upon them. See Isaiah 65:11.

[551] Acts 17:22. Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, you men of Athens, I perceive that in all things you are too superstitious. Colossians 2:21-23 (Touch not; taste not; handle not; Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? Which things have indeed a show of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honor to the satisfying of the flesh.

[552] Malachi 1:7-8, 14. you offer polluted bread upon my altar; and you say, In what have we polluted thee? In that you say, The table of the LORD is contemptible. And if you offer the blind for sacrifice, is it not evil? and if you offer the lame and sick, is it not evil? offer it now unto your governor; will he be pleased with you, or accept your person? says the LORD of hosts....But cursed be the deceiver, which has in his flock a male, and voweth, and sacrificeth unto the Lord a corrupt thing: for I am a great King, says the LORD of hosts, and my name is dreadful among the heathen.

[553] Deuteronomy 4:2. you shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall you diminish ought from it, that you may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you.

[554] Psalm 106:39. Thus were they defiled with their own works, and went a whoring with their own inventions.

[555] Matthew 15:9. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

[556] 1 Peter 1:18. Forasmuch as you know that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers.

[557] Jeremiah 44:17. But we will certainly do whatever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense unto the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes, in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem: for then had we plenty of victuals, and were well, and saw no evil.

[558] Isaiah 65:3-5. A people that provoketh me to anger continually to my face; that sacrificeth in gardens, and burneth incense upon altars of brick; Which remain among the graves, and lodge in the monuments, which eat swine's flesh, and broth of abominable things is in their vessels; Which say, Stand by yourself, come not near to me; for I am holier than thou. These are a smoke in my nose, a fire that burneth all the day. Galatians 1:13-14. For you have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews' religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it: And profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in my own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

[559] 1 Samuel 13:11-12. And Samuel said, What have you done? And Saul said, Because I saw that the people were scattered from me, and that you came not within the days appointed, and that the Philistines gathered themselves together at Michmash; Therefore said I, The Philistines will come down now upon me to Gilgal, and I have not made supplication unto the LORD: I forced myself therefore, and offered a burnt offering. 1 Samuel 15:21. But the people took of the spoil, sheep and oxen, the chief of the things which should have been utterly destroyed, to sacrifice unto the LORD your God in Gilgal.

[560] Acts 8:18-19. And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost.

[561] Romans 2:22. You that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost you commit adultery? you that abhorrest idols, dost you commit sacrilege? Malachi 3:8. Will a man rob God? Yet you have robbed me. But you say, In what have we robbed thee? In tithes and offerings.

[562] Exodus 4:24-26. And it came to pass by the way in the inn, that the LORD met him, and sought to kill him. Then Zipporah took a sharp stone, and cut off the foreskin of her son, and cast it at his feet, and said, Surely a bloody husband art you to me. So he let him go: then she said, A bloody husband you art, because of the circumcision.

[563] Matthew 22:5. But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise. Malachi 1:7, 13. you offer polluted bread upon my altar; and you say, In what have we polluted thee? In that you say, The table of the LORD is contemptible.... you said also, Behold, what a weariness is it! and you have snuffed at it, says the LORD of hosts; and you brought that which was torn, and the lame, and the sick; thus you brought an offering: should I accept this of your hand? says the LORD.

[564] Matthew 23:13. But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for you neither go in yourselves, neither suffer you them that are entering to go in.

[565] Acts 13:44-45. And the next sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God. But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spoke against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming. See 1 Thessalonians 2:15-16.

Q. 110. What are the reasons annexed to the second commandment, the more to enforce it?

A. The reasons annexed to the second commandment, the more to enforce it, contained in these words, For I the Lord your God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; and showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments;[566] are, besides God's sovereignty over us, and propriety in us,[567] his fervent zeal for his own worship,[568] and his revengeful indignation against all false worship, as being a spiritual whoredom;[569] accounting the breakers of this commandment such as hate him, and threatening to punish them unto diverse generations;[570] and esteeming the observers of it such as love him and keep his commandments, and promising mercy to them unto many generations.[571]

[566] Exodus 20:5-6. You shall not bow down yourself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD your God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; And showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.

[567] Psalm 45:11. So shall the king greatly desire your beauty: for he is your Lord; and worship you him. Revelation 15:3-4. And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are your works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are your ways, you King of saints. Who shall not fear you, O Lord, and glorify your name? for you only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee; for your judgments are made manifest. See Psalm 95:2-3, 6-7; Exodus 19:5; Isaiah 54:5.

[568] Exodus 34:13-14. But you shall destroy their altars, break their images, and cut down their groves: For you shall worship no other god: for the LORD, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God.

[569] 1 Corinthians 10:20-22. But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that you should have fellowship with devils. you cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: you cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils. Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than he? Ezekiel 16:26-27. You have also committed fornication with the Egyptians your neighbors, great of flesh; and have increased your whoredoms, to provoke me to anger. Behold, therefore I have stretched out my hand over you, and have diminished your ordinary food, and delivered you unto the will of them that hate you, the daughters of the Philistines, which are ashamed of your lewd way. See Jeremiah 7:18-20; Deuteronomy 32:16-20.

[570] Hosea 2:2-4. Plead with your mother, plead: for she is not my wife, neither am I her husband: let her therefore put away her whoredoms out of her sight, and her adulteries from between her breasts; Lest I strip her naked, and set her as in the day that she was born, and make her as a wilderness, and set her like a dry land, and slay her with thirst. And I will not have mercy upon her children; for they be the children of whoredoms.

[571] Deuteronomy 5:29. O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children for ever!

Q. 111. Which is the third commandment?

A. The third commandment is, You shall not take the name of the Lord your God in vain: for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.[572]

[572] Exodus 20:7. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:11.

Q. 112. What is required in the third commandment?

A. The third commandment requires, That the name of God, his titles, attributes,[573] ordinances,[574] the Word,[575] sacraments,[576] prayer,[577] oaths,[578] vows,[579] lots,[580] his works,[581] and whatever else there is whereby he makes himself known, be holily and reverently used in thought,[582] meditation,[583] word,[584] and writing:[585] by an holy profession,[586] and answerable conversation,[587] to the glory of God,[588] and the good of ourselves,[589] and others.[590].

[573] Matthew 6:9. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, May your name be holy. Deuteronomy 28:58. If you will not observe to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that you may fear this glorious and fearful name, THE LORD your GOD.

Psalm 68:4. Sing unto God, sing praises to his name: extol him that rideth upon the heavens by his name JAH, and rejoice before him. See Psalm 29:2; 1 Chronicles 29:10-13; Revelation 15:3-4.

[574] Ecclesiastes 5:1. Keep your foot when you go to the house of God, and be more ready to hear, than to give the sacrifice of fools: for they consider not that they do evil. Luke 1:6. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. See Malachi 1:11, 14.

[575] Psalm 138:2. I will worship toward your holy temple, and praise your name for your lovingkindness and for your truth: for you have magnified your word above all your name.

[576] 1 Corinthians 11:24-25, 28-29. And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me.... But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

[577] 1 Timothy 2:8. I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

[578] Jeremiah 4:2. And you shall swear, The LORD liveth, in truth, in judgment, and in righteousness; and the nations shall bless themselves in him, and in him shall they glory.

[579] Ecclesiastes 5:2, 4-6. Be not rash with your mouth, and let not your heart be havy to utter any thing before God: for God is in heaven, and you upon earth: therefore let your words be few.... When you vowest a vow unto God, defer not to pay it; for he has no pleasure in fools: pay that which you have vowed. Better is it that you shouldest not vow, than that you shouldest vow and not pay. Suffer not your mouth to cause your flesh to sin; neither say you before the angel, that it was an error: wherefore should God be angry at your voice, and destroy the work of your hands?

[580] Acts 1:24, 26. And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, which know the hearts of all men, show whether of these two you have chosen.... And they gave forth their lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

[581] Job 36:24. Remember that you magnify his work, which men behold.

[582] Malachi 3:16. Then they that feared the LORD spoke often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon his name.

[583] Psalm 8:1, 3-4. O LORD our Lord, how excellent is your name in all the earth! who have set your glory above the heavens.... When I consider your heavens, the work of your fingers, the moon and the stars, which you have ordained; What is man, that you art mindful of him? and the son of man, that you visitest him?

[584] Psalm 105:2, 5. Sing unto him, sing psalms unto him: talk you of all his wondrous works.... Remember his marvellous works that he has done; his wonders, and the judgments of his mouth. See Colossians 3:17.

[585] Psalm 102:18. This shall be written for the generation to come: and the people which shall be created shall praise the LORD.

[586] 1 Peter 3:15. But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear. Micah 4:5. For all people will walk every one in the name of his god, and we will walk in the name of the LORD our God for ever and ever.

[587] Philippians 1:27. Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that you stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the gospel.

[588] 1 Corinthians 10:31. Whether therefore you eat, or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God.

[589] Jeremiah 32:39. And I will give them one heart, and one way, that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them.

[590] 1 Peter 2:12. Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

Q. 113. What are the sins forbidden in the third commandment?

A. The sins forbidden in the third commandment are, the not using of God's name as is required;[591] and the abuse of it in an ignorant,[592] vain,[593] irreverent, profane,[594] superstitious[595] or wicked mentioning or otherwise using his titles, attributes,[596] ordinances,[597] or works,[598] by blasphemy,[599] perjury;[600] all sinful cursings,[601] oaths,[602] vows,[603] and lots;[604] violating of our oaths and vows, if lawful[605] and fulfilling them, if of things unlawful;[606] murmuring and quarrelling at,[607] curious prying into,[608] and misapplying of God's decrees[609] and providences;[610] misinterpreting,[611] misapplying,[612] or any way perverting the Word, or any part of it;[613] to profane jests,[614] curious or unprofitable questions, vain janglings, or the maintaining of false doctrines;[615] abusing it, the creatures, or anything contained under the name of God, to charms,[616] or sinful lusts and practices;[617] the maligning,[618] scorning,[619] reviling,[620] or any wise opposing of God's truth, grace, and ways;[621] making profession of religion in hypocrisy, or for sinister ends;[622] being ashamed of it,[623] or a shame to it, by unconformable,[624] unwise,[625] unfruitful,[626] and offensive walking,[627] or backsliding from it.[628].

[591] Malachi 2:2. If you will not hear, and if you will not lay it to heart, to give glory unto my name, says the LORD of hosts, I will even send a curse upon you, and I will curse your blessings: yea, I have cursed them already, because you do not lay it to heart.

[592] Acts 17:23. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore you ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

[593] Proverbs 30:9. Lest I be full, and deny you, and say, Who is the LORD? or lest I be poor, and steal, and take the name of my God in vain.

[594] Malachi 1:6-7, 12. A son honoreth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a father, where is my honor? and if I be a master, where is my fear? says the LORD of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And you say, In what have we despised your name? you offer polluted bread upon my altar; and you say, In what have we polluted thee? In that you say, The table of the LORD is contemptible.... But you have profaned it, in that you say, The table of the LORD is polluted; and the fruit of it, even his meat, is contemptible. Malachi 3:14. you have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts?

[595] 1 Samuel 4:3-5. And when the people were come into the camp, the elders of Israel said, Wherefore has the LORD smitten us to day before the Philistines? Let us fetch the ark of the covenant of the LORD out of Shiloh unto us, that, when it cometh among us, it may save us out of the hand of our enemies. So the people sent to Shiloh, that they might bring from thence the ark of the covenant of the LORD of hosts, which dwelleth between the cherubims: and the two sons of Eli, Hophni and Phinehas, were there with the ark of the covenant of God. And when the ark of the covenant of the LORD came into the camp, all Israel shouted with a great shout, so that the earth rang again. Jeremiah 7:4, 9-10, 14, 31. Trust you not in lying words, saying, The temple of the LORD, The temple of the LORD, The temple of the LORD, are these.... Will you steal, murder, and commit adultery, and swear falsely, and burn incense unto Baal, and walk after other gods whom you know not; And come and stand before me in this house, which is called by my name, and say, We are delivered to do all these abominations?... Therefore will I do unto this house, which is called by my name, in which you trust, and unto the place which I gave to you and to your fathers, as I have done to Shiloh.... And they have built the high places of Tophet, which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my heart. Colossians 2:20-22. Wherefore if you be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are you subject to ordinances, (Touch not; taste not; handle not; Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men?

[596] 2 Kings 18:30, 35. Neither let Hezekiah make you trust in the LORD, saying, The LORD will surely deliver us, and this city shall not be delivered into the hand of the king of Assyria.... Who are they among all the gods of the countries, that have delivered their country out of my hand, that the LORD should deliver Jerusalem out of my hand? Exodus 5:2. And Pharaoh said, Who is the LORD, that I should obey his voice to let Israel go? I know not the LORD, neither will I let Israel go. Psalm 139:20. For they speak against you wickedly, and your enemies take your name in vain.

[597] Psalm 50:16-17. But unto the wicked God says, What have you to do to declare my statutes, or that you shouldst take my covenant in your mouth? Seeing you hatest instruction, and castest my words behind thee.

[598] Isaiah 5:12. And the harp, and the viol, the tabret, and pipe, and wine, are in their feasts: but they regard not the work of the LORD, neither consider the operation of his hands.

[599] 2 Kings 19:22. Whom have you reproached and blasphemed? and against whom have you exalted your voice, and lifted up your eyes on high? even against the Holy One of Israel. Leviticus 24:11. And the Israelitish woman's son blasphemed the name of the LORD, and cursed. And they brought him unto Moses: (and his mother's name was Shelomith, the daughter of Dibri, of the tribe of Dan:).

[600] Zechariah 5:4. I will bring it forth, says the LORD of hosts, and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by my name: and it shall remain in the midst of his house, and shall consume it with the timber of it and the stones of it. Zechariah 8:17.

And let none of you imagine evil in your hearts against his neighbor; and love no false oath: for all these are things that I hate, says the LORD.

[601] 1 Samuel 17:43. And the Philistine said unto David, Am I a dog, that you comest to me with staves? And the Philistine cursed David by his gods. 2 Samuel 16:5. And when king David came to Bahurim, behold, thence came out a man of the family of the house of Saul, whose name was Shimei, the son of Gera: he came forth, and cursed still as he came.

[602] Jeremiah 5:7. How shall I pardon you for this? your children have forsaken me, and sworn by them that are no gods: when I had fed them to the full, they then committed adultery, and assembled themselves by troops in the harlots' houses. Jeremiah 23:10. For the land is full of adulterers; for because of swearing the land mourneth; the pleasant places of the wilderness are dried up, and their course is evil, and their force is not right.

[603] Deuteronomy 23:18. You shall not bring the hire of a whore, or the price of a dog, into the house of the LORD your God for any vow: for even both these are abomination unto the LORD your God. Acts 23:12, 14. And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul.... And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said, We have bound ourselves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing until we have slain Paul.

[604] Esther 3:7. In the first month, that is, the month Nisan, in the twelfth year of king Ahasuerus, they cast Pur, that is, the lot, before Haman from day to day, and from month to month, to the twelfth month, that is, the month Adar. Esther 9:24. Because Haman the son of Hammedatha, the Agagite, the enemy of all the Jews, had devised against the Jews to destroy them, and had cast Pur, that is, the lot, to consume them, and to destroy them. Psalm 22:18. They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture.

[605] Psalm 24:4. He that has clean hands, and a pure heart; who has not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully. Ezekiel 17:16, 18-19. As I live, says the Lord GOD, surely in the place where the king dwelleth that made him king, whose oath he despised, and whose covenant he brake, even with him in the midst of Babylon he shall die.... Seeing he despised the oath by breaking the covenant, when, lo, he had given his hand, and has done all these things, he shall not escape. Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; As I live, surely my oath that he has despised, and my covenant that he has broken, even it will I recompense upon his own head.

[606] Mark 6:26. And the king was exceeding sorry; yet for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her. 1 Samuel 25:22, 32-34. So and more also do God unto the enemies of David, if I leave of all that pertain to him by the morning light any that pisseth against the wall..... And David said to Abigail, Blessed be the LORD God of Israel, which sent you this day to meet me: And blessed be your advice, and blessed be thou, which have kept me this day from coming to shed blood, and from avenging myself with my own hand. For in very deed, as the LORD God of Israel liveth, which has kept me back from hurting you, except you hadst haveed and come to meet me, surely there had not been left unto Nabal by the morning light any that pisseth against the wall.

[607] Romans 9:14, 19-20. What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.... You will say then unto me, Why does he yet find fault? For who has resisted his will? Nay but, O man, who art you that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why have you made me thus?

[608] Deuteronomy 29:29. The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law.

[609] Romans 3:5, 7. But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man).... For if the truth of God has more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner? Romans 6:1-2. What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer in it?

[610] Ecclesiastes 8:11. Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil. Ecclesiastes 9:3. This is an evil among all things that are done under the sun, that there is one event unto all: yea, also the heart of the sons of men is full of evil, and madness is in their heart while they live, and after that they go to the dead. See Psalm 39.

[611] Matthew 5:21-22, 27-28, 31-35, 38-39, 43-44. you have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire....Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart....It has been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorce: But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery. Again, you have heard that it has been said by them of old time, You shall not forswear yourself, but shall perform unto the Lord your oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King....Ye have heard that it has been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That you resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite you on your right cheek, turn to him the other also. ...Ye have heard that it has been said, You shall love your neighbor, and hate your enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you.

[612] Ezekiel 13:22. Because with lies you have made the heart of the righteous sad, whom I have not made sad; and strengthened the hands of the wicked, that he should not return from his wicked way, by promising him life.

[613] 2 Peter 3:16. As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction. See Matthew 22:24-31.

[614] Isaiah 22:13. And behold joy and gladness, slaying oxen, and killing sheep, eating flesh, and drinking wine: let us eat and drink; for to morrow we shall die. Jeremiah 23:34, 36, 38. And as for the prophet, and the priest, and the people, that shall say, The burden of the LORD, I will even punish that man and his house..... And the burden of the LORD shall you mention no more: for every man's word shall be his burden; for you have perverted the words of the living God, of the LORD of hosts our God.... But since you say, The burden of the LORD; therefore thus says the LORD; Because you say this word, The burden of the LORD, and I have sent unto you, saying, you shall not say, The burden of the LORD.

[615] 1 Timothy 1:4, 6-7. Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do.... From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling; Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. 1 Timothy 6:4-5, 20. He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings, Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw yourself.... O Timothy, keep that which is committed to your trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called. 2 Timothy 2:14.

Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord that they strive not about words to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers. Titus 3:9. But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.

[616] Deuteronomy 18:10-14. There shall not be found among you any one that makes his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch. Or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer. For all that do these things are an abomination unto the LORD: and because of these abominations the LORD your God does drive them out from before thee. You shall be perfect with the LORD your God. For these nations, which you shall possess, hearkened unto observers of times, and unto diviners: but as for you, the LORD your God has not suffered you so to do. Acts 19:13. Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth.

[617] 2 Timothy 4:3-4. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables. 1 Kings 21:9-10. And she wrote in the letters, saying, Proclaim a fast, and set Naboth on high among the people: And set two men, sons of Belial, before him, to bear witness against him, saying, You didst blaspheme God and the king. And then carry him out, and stone him, that he may die. Jude 4. For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ. See Romans 13:13-14.

[618] Acts 13:45. But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spoke against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming. 1 John 3:12. Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.

[619] Psalm 1:1. Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. 2 Peter 3:3. Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts.

[620] 1 Peter 4:4. In which they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you.

[621] Acts 13:45-46, 50. But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spoke against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming. Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing you put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.... But the Jews stirred up the devout and honorable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts. Acts 4:18. And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus. 1 Thessalonians 2:16. Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost. Hebrews 10:29. Of how much sorcer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and has done despite unto the Spirit of grace? See Acts 19:9.

[622] 2 Timothy 3:5. Having a form of godliness, but denying the power of it: from such turn away. Matthew 23:14. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore you shall receive the greater damnation. See Matthew 6:1-2, 5, 16.

[623] Mark 8:38. Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.

[624] Psalm 73:14-15. For all the day long have I been plagued, and chastened every morning. If I say, I will speak thus; behold, I should offend against the generation of your children.

[625] Ephesians 5:15-17. See then that you walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. Wherefore be you not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is. See 1 Corinthians 6:5-6.

[626] Isaiah 5:4. What could have been done more to my vineyard, that I have not done in it? wherefore, when I looked that it should bring forth grapes, brought it forth wild grapes? See 2 Peter 1:8-9.

[627] Romans 2:23-24. You that make your boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonorest you God? For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.

[628] Galatians 3:1, 3. O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ has been evidently set forth, crucified among you?... Are you so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are you now made perfect by the flesh? See Hebrews 6:6.

Q. 114. What reasons are annexed to the third commandment?

A. The reasons annexed to the third commandment, in these words, The Lord your God, and, For the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain,[629] are, because he is the Lord and our God, therefore his name is not to be profaned, or any way abused by us;[630] especially because he will be so far from acquitting and sparing the transgressors of this commandment, as that he will not suffer them to escape his righteous judgment;[631] albeit many such escape the censures and punishments of men.[632]

[629] Exodus 20:7. You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.

[630] Leviticus 19:12. And you shall not swear by my name falsely, neither shall you profane the name of your God: I am the LORD.

[631] Deuteronomy 28:58-59. If you will not observe to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that you may fear this glorious and fearful name, THE LORD your GOD; Then the LORD will make your plagues wonderful, and the plagues of your seed, even great plagues, and of long continuance, and sore sicknesses, and of long continuance. See Ezekiel 36:21-23.

[632] 1 Samuel 2:29. Wherefore kick you at my sacrifice and at my offering, which I have commanded in my habitation; and honorest your sons above me, to make yourselves fat with the chiefest of all the offerings of Israel my people? 1 Samuel 3:13. For I have told him that I will judge his house for ever for the iniquity which he knoweth; because his sons made themselves vile, and he restrained them not. See 1 Samuel 2:12-17, 22-25.

Q. 115. Which is the fourth commandment?

A. The fourth commandment is, Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shall you labor, and do all your work; but the seventh day is the sabbath of the Lord your God: in it you shall not do any work, thou, nor your son, nor your daughter, your man-servant, nor your maid-servant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger that is within your gates. For in six days the Lord

made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested in the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath-day and made it holy it.[633].

[633] Exodus 20:8-11. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:12-15.

Q. 116. What is required in the fourth commandment?

A. The fourth commandment requireth of all men the sanctifying or keeping holy to God such set times as he has appointed in his Word, expressly one whole day in seven; which was the seventh from the beginning of the world to the resurrection of Christ, and the first day of the week ever since, and so to continue to the end of the world; which is the Christian sabbath,[634] and in the New Testament called The Lord's day.[635]

[634] Deuteronomy 5:12-14. Keep the sabbath day to sanctify it, as the LORD your God has commanded thee. Six days you shall labor, and do all your work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD your God: in it you shall not do any work, thou, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your manservant, nor your maidservant, nor your ox, nor your ass, nor any of your cattle, nor your stranger that is within your gates; that your manservant and your maidservant may rest as well as thou. Genesis 2:2-3. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. 1 Corinthians 16:1-2. Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye. Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God has prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come. Acts 20:7. And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight. John 20:19, 26. Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and says unto them, Peace be unto you....And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. See Matthew 5:17-18; Isaiah 56:2, 4, 6-7.

[635] Revelation 1:10. I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet.

Q. 117. How is the sabbath or the Lord's day to be sanctified?

A. The sabbath or Lord's day is to be sanctified by an holy resting all the day,[636] not only from such works as are at all times sinful, but even from such worldly employments and recreations as are on other days lawful;[637] and making it our delight to spend the whole time (except so much of it as is to be taken up in works of necessity and mercy[638]) in the public and private exercises of God's worship:[639] and, to that end, we are to prepare our hearts, and with such foresight, diligence, and moderation, to dispose and seasonably dispatch our worldly business, that we may be the more free and fit for the duties of that day.[640]

[636] Exodus 20:8, 10. Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy.... But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD your God: in it you shall not do any work, thou, nor your son, nor your daughter, your manservant, nor your maidservant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger that is within your gates.

[637] Exodus 16:25-28. And Moses said, Eat that to day; for to day is a sabbath unto the LORD: to day you shall not find it in the field. Six days you shall gather it; but on the seventh day, which is the sabbath, in it there shall be none. And it came to pass, that there went out some of the people on the seventh day for to gather, and they found none. And the LORD said unto Moses, How long refuse you to keep my commandments and my laws? Jeremiah 17:21-22. Thus says the LORD; Take heed to yourselves, and bear no burden on the sabbath day, nor bring it in by

the gates of Jerusalem; Neither carry forth a burden out of your houses on the sabbath day, neither do you any work, but hallow you the sabbath day, as I commanded your fathers. See Nehemiah 13:15-22.

[638] Matthew 12:1-5. At that time Jesus went on the sabbath day through the corn; and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the ears of corn and to eat. But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, your disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath day. But he said unto them, Have you not read what David did, when he was an hungred, and they that were with him; How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the showbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests? Or have you not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless? See verses 6-13.

[639] Isaiah 58:13-14. If you turn away your foot from the sabbath, from doing your pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the LORD, honorable; and shall honor him, not doing your own ways, nor finding your own pleasure, nor speaking your own words. Then shall you delight yourself in the LORD; and I will cause you to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed you with the heritage of Jacob your father: for the mouth of the LORD has spoken it. Luke 4:16. And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read. Acts 20:7. And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight. 1 Corinthians 16:1-2. Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye. Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God has prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come. Leviticus 23:3. Six days shall work be done: but the seventh day is the sabbath of rest, an holy convocation; you shall do no work on it: it is the sabbath of the LORD in all your dwellings. See Psalm 92 title; Isaiah 66:23.

[640] Exodus 20:8. Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Luke 23:54, 56. And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.... And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath day according to the commandment. Exodus 16:22, 25-26, 29. And it came to pass, that on the sixth day they gathered twice as much bread, two omers for one man: and all the rulers of the congregation came and told Moses.... And Moses said, Eat that to day; for to day is a sabbath unto the LORD: to day you shall not find it in the field. Six days you shall gather it; but on the seventh day, which is the sabbath, in it there shall be none.... See, for that the LORD has given you the sabbath, therefore he giveth you on the sixth day the bread of two days; abide you every man in his place, let no man go out of his place on the seventh day. Nehemiah 13:19. And it came to pass, that when the gates of Jerusalem began to be dark before the sabbath, I commanded that the gates should be shut, and charged that they should not be opened till after the sabbath: and some of my servants set I at the gates, that there should no burden be brought in on the sabbath day.

Q. 118. Why is the charge of keeping the sabbath more specially directed to governors of families, and other superiors?

A. The charge of keeping the sabbath is more specially directed to governors of families, and other superiors, because they are bound not only to keep it themselves, but to see that it is observed by all those that are under their charge; and because they are prone oftentimes to hinder them by employments of their own.[641]

[641] Exodus 20:10. But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD your God: in it you shall not do any work, thou, nor your son, nor your daughter, your manservant, nor your maidservant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger that is within your gates. Exodus 23:12. Six days you shall do your work, and on the seventh day you shall rest: that your ox and your ass may rest, and the son of

your handmaid, and the stranger, may be refreshed. See Joshua 24:15; Nehemiah 13:15-17; Jeremiah 17:20-22.

Q. 119. What are the sins forbidden in the fourth commandment?

A. The sins forbidden in the fourth commandment are, all omissions of the duties required,[642] all careless, negligent, and unprofitable performing of them, and being weary of them;[643] all profaning the day by idleness, and doing that which is in itself sinful;[644] and by all needless works, words, and thoughts, about our worldly employments and recreations.[645]

[642] Ezekiel 22:26. Her priests have violated my law, and have profaned my holy things: they have put no difference between the holy and profane, neither have they showed difference between the unclean and the clean, and have hid their eyes from my sabbaths, and I am profaned among them.

[643] Amos 8:5. Saying, When will the new moon be gone, that we may sell corn? and the sabbath, that we may set forth wheat, making the ephah small, and the shekel great, and falsifying the balances by deceit? See Acts 20:7, 9; Ezekiel 33:30-32; Malachi 1:13.

[644] Ezekiel 23:38. Moreover this they have done unto me: they have defiled my sanctuary in the same day, and have profaned my sabbaths.

[645] Jeremiah 17:24, 27. And it shall come to pass, if you diligently hearken unto me, says the LORD, to bring in no burden through the gates of this city on the sabbath day, but hallow the sabbath day, to do no work on it.... But if you will not hearken unto me to hallow the sabbath day, and not to bear a burden, even entering in at the gates of Jerusalem on the sabbath day; then will I kindle a fire in the gates of it, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched. See Isaiah 58:13-14.

Q. 120. What are the reasons annexed to the fourth commandment, the more to enforce it?

A. The reasons annexed to the fourth commandment, the more to enforce it, are taken from the equity of it, God allowing us six days of seven for our own affairs, and reserving but one for himself in these words, Six days shall you labor, and do all your work:[646] from God's challenging a special propriety in that day, The seventh day is the sabbath of the Lord your God:[647] from the example of God, who in six days made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: and from that blessing which God put upon that day, not only in sanctifying it to be a day for his service, but in ordaining it to be a means of blessing to us in our sanctifying it; Wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and made it holy it.[648]

[646] Exodus 20:9. Six days shall you labor, and do all your work.

[647] Exodus 20:10. But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD your God: in it you shall not do any work, thou, nor your son, nor your daughter, your manservant, nor your maidservant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger that is within your gates.

[648] Exodus 20:11. For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and made it holy it.

Q. 121. Why is the word Remember set in the beginning of the fourth commandment?

A. The word Remember is set in the beginning of the fourth commandment,[649] partly, because of the great benefit of remembering it, we being thereby helped in our preparation to keep it,[650] and, in keeping it, better to keep all the rest of the commandments,[651] and to continue a thankful remembrance of the two great benefits of creation and redemption, which contain a short

abridgment of religion;[652] and partly, because we are very ready to forget it,[653] for that there is less light of nature for it,[654] and yet it restraineth our natural liberty in things at other times lawful;[655] that it cometh but once in seven days, and many worldly businesses come between, and too often take off our minds from thinking of it, either to prepare for it, or to sanctify it;[656] and that Satan with his instruments labors much to blot out the glory, and even the memory of it, to bring in all irreligion and impiety.[657]

[649] Exodus 20:8. Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. 88 [650] Exodus 16:23. And he said unto them, This is that which the LORD has said, To morrow is the rest of the holy sabbath unto the LORD: bake that which you will bake to day, and seethe that you will seethe; and that which remaineth over lay up for you to be kept until the morning. Luke 23:54, 56. And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.... And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath day according to the commandment. See Mark 15:42; Nehemiah 13:19.

[651] Ezekiel 20:12, 19-20. Moreover also I gave them my sabbaths, to be a sign between me and them, that they might know that I am the LORD that sanctify them.... I am the LORD your God; walk in my statutes, and keep my judgments, and do them; And hallow my sabbaths; and they shall be a sign between me and you, that you may know that I am the LORD your God. Psalm 92:13-14. Those that be planted in the house of the LORD shall flourish in the courts of our God. They shall still bring forth fruit in old age; they shall be fat and flourishing. See Psalm 92 title.

[652] Genesis 2:2-3. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. Psalm 118:22, 24. The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner.... This is the day which the LORD has made; we will rejoice and be glad in it. Revelation 1:10. I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet.

[653] Ezekiel 22:26. Her priests have violated my law, and have profaned my holy things: they have put no difference between the holy and profane, neither have they showed difference between the unclean and the clean, and have hid their eyes from my sabbaths, and I am profaned among them.

[654] Nehemiah 9:14. And madest known unto them your holy sabbath, and commandedst them precepts, statutes, and laws, by the hand of Moses your servant.

[655] Exodus 34:21. Six days you shall work, but on the seventh day you shall rest: in earing time and in harvest you shall rest.

[656] Deuteronomy 5:14-15. But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD your God: in it you shall not do any work, thou, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your manservant, nor your maidservant, nor your ox, nor your ass, nor any of your cattle, nor your stranger that is within your gates; that your manservant and your maidservant may rest as well as thou. And remember that you were a servant in the land of Egypt, and that the LORD your God brought you out thence through a mighty hand and by a stretched out arm: therefore the LORD your God commanded you to keep the sabbath day. Amos 8:5. Saying, When will the new moon be gone, that we may sell corn? and the sabbath, that we may set forth wheat, making the ephah small, and the shekel great, and falsifying the balances by deceit?

[657] Lamentations 1:7. Jerusalem remembered in the days of her affliction and of her miseries all her pleasant things that she had in the days of old, when her people fell into the hand of the enemy, and none did help her: the adversaries saw her, and did mock at her sabbaths. Jeremiah 17:21-23. Thus says the LORD; Take heed to yourselves, and bear no burden on the sabbath day, nor bring it in by the gates of Jerusalem; Neither carry forth a burden out of your houses on

the sabbath day, neither do you any work, but hallow you the sabbath day, as I commanded your fathers. But they obeyed not, neither inclined their ear, but made their neck stiff, that they might not hear, nor receive instruction. See Nehemiah 13:15-22.

**Q. 122. What is the sum of the six commandments which contain our duty to man?**

*A. The sum of the six commandments which contain our duty to man, is, to love our neighbor as ourselves,[658] and to do to others what we would have them to do to us.[659]*

[658] Matthew 22:39. And the second is like unto it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself.

[659] Matthew 7:12. Therefore all things whatever you would that men should do to you, do you even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

**Q. 123. Which is the fifth commandment?**

*A. The fifth commandment is, Honor your father and your mother: that your days may be long upon the land which the Lord your God giveth thee.[660]*

[660] Exodus 20:12. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:16.

**Q. 124. Who are meant by father and mother in the fifth commandment?**

*A. By father and mother, in the fifth commandment, are meant, not only natural parents,[661] but all superiors in age[662] and gifts;[663] and especially such as, by God's ordinance, are over us in place of authority, whether in family,[664] church,[665] or commonwealth.[666]*

[661] Proverbs 23:22, 25. Hearken unto your father that begat you, and despise not your mother when she is old.... your father and your mother shall be glad, and she that bare you shall rejoice. See Ephesians 6:1-2.

[662] 1 Timothy 5:1-2. Rebuke not an elder, but entreat him as a father; and the younger men as brethren; The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity.

[663] Genesis 4:20-21. And Adah bare Jabal: he was the father of such as dwell in tents, and of such as have cattle. And his brother's name was Jubal: he was the father of all such as handle the harp and organ. Genesis 45:8. So now it was not you that sent me hither, but God: and he has made me a father to Pharaoh, and lord of all his house, and a ruler throughout all the land of Egypt.

[664] 2 Kings 5:13. And his servants came near, and spoke unto him, and said, My father, if the prophet had bid you do some great thing, wouldest you not have done it? how much rather then, when he says to you, Wash, and be clean?

[665] 2 Kings 2:12. And Elisha saw it, and he cried, My father, my father, the chariot of Israel, and the horsemen of it. And he saw him no more: and he took hold of his own clothes, and rent them in two pieces. Galatians 4:19. My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you. See 2 Kings 13:14.

[666] Isaiah 49:23. And kings shall be your nursing fathers, and their queens your nursing mothers: they shall bow down to you with their face toward the earth, and lick up the dust of your feet; and you shall know that I am the LORD: for they shall not be ashamed that wait for me.

**Q. 125. Why are superiors styled father and mother?**

A. *Superiors are styled father and mother, both to teach them in all duties toward their inferiors, like natural parents, to express love and tenderness to them, according to their several relations;[667] and to work inferiors to a greater willingness and cheerfulness in performing their duties to their superiors, as to their parents.[668]*

[667] Ephesians 6:4. And, you fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. 2 Corinthians 12:14. Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensome to you: for I seek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children. 1 Thessalonians 2:7-8, 11. But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children: So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because you were dear unto us.... As you know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you, as a father does his children. See Numbers 11:11-12.

[668] 1 Corinthians 4:14-16. I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn you. For though you have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have you not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel. Wherefore I beseech you, be you followers of me. See 2 Kings 5:13.

Q. 126. What is the general scope of the fifth commandment?

A. The general scope of the fifth commandment is, the performance of those duties which we mutually owe in our several relations, as inferiors, superiors, or equals.[669]

[669] Ephesians 5:21. Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God. 1 Peter 2:17. Honor all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king. Romans 12:10. Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honor preferring one another. See Romans 13:1, 7; Ephesians 5:22, 24; 6:1, 4-5, 9.

Q. 127. What is the honor that inferiors owe to their superiors?

A. The honor which inferiors owe to their superiors is, all due reverence in heart,[670] word, [671] and behaviour;[672] prayer and thanksgiving for them;[673] imitation of their virtues and graces;[674] willing obedience to their lawful commands and counsels;[675] due submission to their corrections;[676] fidelity to,[677] defence,[678] and maintenance of their persons and authority, according to their several ranks, and the nature of their places;[679] bearing with their infirmities, and covering them in love,[680] that so they may be an honor to them and to their government.[681]

[670] Malachi 1:6. A son honoreth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a father, where is my honor? and if I be a master, where is my fear? says the LORD of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And you say, In what have we despised your name? Leviticus 19:3. you shall fear every man his mother, and his father, and keep my sabbaths: I am the LORD your God.

[671] Proverbs 31:28. Her children arise up, and call her blessed; her husband also, and he praiseth her. 1 Peter 3:6. Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters you are, as long as you do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

[672] Leviticus 19:32. You shall rise up before the hoary head, and honor the face of the old man, and fear your God: I am the LORD. 1 Kings 2:19. Bathsheba therefore went unto king Solomon, to speak unto him for Adonijah. And the king rose up to meet her, and bowed himself unto her, and sat down on his throne, and caused a seat to be set for the king's mother; and she sat on his right hand.

[673] 1 Timothy 2:1-2. I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

[674] Hebrews 13:7. Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation. Philippians 3:17. Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as you have us for an ensample.

[675] Ephesians 6:1-2, 5-7. Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. Honor your father and mother; (which is the first commandment with promise;)... Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ; Not with eyerservice, as menpleasers; but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart; With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men. 1 Peter 2:13-14. Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it is to the king, as supreme; Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. Hebrews 13:17. Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you. See Romans 13:1-5; Proverbs 4:3-4; 23:22; Exodus 18:19, 24.

[676] Hebrews 12:9. Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? 1 Peter 2:18-20. Servants, be subject to your masters with all fear; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward. For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is it, if, when you be buffeted for your faults, you shall take it patiently? but if, when you do well, and suffer for it, you take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.

[677] Titus 2:9-10. Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things; not answering again; Not purloining, but showing all good fidelity; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Savior in all things.

[678] 1 Samuel 26:15-16. And David said to Abner, Art not you a valiant man? and who is like to you in Israel? wherefore then have you not kept your lord the king? for there came one of the people in to destroy the king your lord. This thing is not good that you have done. As the LORD liveth, you are worthy to die, because you have not kept your master, the LORD'S anointed. And now see where the king's spear is, and the cruse of water that was at his bolster. See 2 Samuel 18:3; Esther 6:2.

[679] Matthew 22:21. They say unto him, Caesar's. Then says he unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's. Romans 13:6-7. For for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing. Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor. 1 Timothy 5:17-18. Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially they who labor in the word and doctrine. For the scripture says, You shall not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn. And, The laborer is worthy of his reward. See Galatians 6:6; Genesis 45:11; 47:12.

[680] Genesis 9:23. And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it upon both their shoulders, and went backward, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their faces were backward, and they saw not their father's nakedness. See 1 Peter 2:18; Proverbs 23:22.

[681] Psalm 127:3-5. Lo, children are an heritage of the LORD: and the fruit of the womb is his reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of the youth. Happy is the man that has his quiver full of them: they shall not be ashamed, but they shall speak with the

enemies in the gate. Proverbs 31:23. Her husband is known in the gates, when he sitteth among the elders of the land.

Q. 128. What are the sins of inferiors against their superiors?

A. The sins of inferiors against their superiors are, all neglect of the duties required toward them;[682] envying at,[683] contempt of,[684] and rebellion[685] against, their persons[686] and places,[687] in their lawful counsels,[688] commands, and corrections;[689] cursing, mocking[690] and all such refractory and scandalous carriage, as proves a shame and dishonor to them and their government.[691]

[682] Matthew 15:4-6. For God commanded, saying, Honor your father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But you say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatever you mightest be profited by me; And honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have you made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. Romans 13:8. Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loves another has fulfilled the law.

[683] Numbers 11:28-29. And Joshua the son of Nun, the servant of Moses, one of his young men, answered and said, My lord Moses, forbid them. And Moses said unto him, Enviest you for my sake? would God that all the LORD'S people were prophets, and that the LORD would put his spirit upon them!

[684] 1 Samuel 8:7. And the LORD said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto thee: for they have not rejected you, but they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them. Isaiah 3:5. And the people shall be oppressed, every one by another, and every one by his neighbor: the child shall behave himself proudly against the ancient, and the base against the honorable.

[685] 2 Samuel 15:10. But Absalom sent spies throughout all the tribes of Israel, saying, As soon as you hear the sound of the trumpet, then you shall say, Absalom reigns in Hebron. See verses 1-12.

[686] Exodus 21:15. And he that smiteth his father, or his mother, shall be surely put to death.

[687] 1 Samuel 10:27. But the children of Belial said, How shall this man save us? And they despised him, and brought him no presents. But he held his peace.

[688] 1 Samuel 2:25. If one man sin against another, the judge shall judge him: but if a man sin against the LORD, who shall entreat for him? Notwithstanding they hearkened not unto the voice of their father, because the LORD would slay them.

[689] Deuteronomy 21:18-21. If a man have a stubborn and rebellious son, which will not obey the voice of his father, or the voice of his mother, and that, when they have chastened him, will not hearken unto them: Then shall his father and his mother lay hold on him, and bring him out unto the elders of his city, and unto the gate of his place; And they shall say unto the elders of his city, This our son is stubborn and rebellious, he will not obey our voice; he is a glutton, and a drunkard. And all the men of his city shall stone him with stones, that he die: so shall you put evil away from among you; and all Israel shall hear, and fear.

[690] Proverbs 30:11, 17. There is a generation that curseth their father, and does not bless their mother.... The eye that mocketh at his father, and despiseth to obey his mother, the ravens of the valley shall pick it out, and the young eagles shall eat it.

[691] Proverbs 19:26. He that wasteth his father, and chaseth away his mother, is a son that causeth shame, and bringeth reproach.

Q. 129. What is required of superiors towards their inferiors?

A. It is required of superiors, according to that power they receive from God, and that relation in which they stand, to love,[692] pray for,[693] and bless their inferiors;[694] to instruct,[695] counsel, and admonish them;[696] countenancing,[697] commanding,[698] and rewarding such as do well;[699] and discountenancing,[700] reproving, and chiding such as do ill;[701] protecting,[702] and providing for them all things necessary for soul[703] and body:[704] and by grave, wise, holy, and exemplary carriage, to procure glory to God,[705] honor to themselves,[706] and so to preserve that authority which God has put upon them.[707]

[692] Colossians 3:19. Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them. Titus 2:4. That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children.

[693] 1 Samuel 12:23. Moreover as for me, God forbid that I should sin against the LORD in ceasing to pray for you: but I will teach you the good and the right way. Job 1:5. And it was so, when the days of their feasting were gone about, that Job sent and sanctified them, and rose up early in the morning, and offered burnt offerings according to the number of them all: for Job said, It may be that my sons have sinned, and cursed God in their hearts. Thus did Job continually.

[694] 1 Kings 8:55-56. And he stood, and blessed all the congregation of Israel with a loud voice, saying, Blessed be the LORD, that has given rest unto his people Israel, according to all that he promised: there has not failed one word of all his good promise, which he promised by the hand of Moses his servant. Hebrews 7:7. And without all contradiction the less is blessed of the better. See Genesis 49:28.

[695] Deuteronomy 6:6-7. And these words, which I command you this day, shall be in your heart: And you shall teach them diligently unto your children, and shall talk of them when you sittest in your house, and when you walkest by the way, and when you liest down, and when you risest up.

[696] Ephesians 6:4. And, you fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

[697] 1 Peter 3:7. Likewise, you husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honor unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.

[698] 1 Peter 2:14. Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. Romans 13:3. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Will you then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and you shall have praise of the same.

[699] Esther 6:3. And the king said, What honor and dignity has been done to Mordecai for this? Then said the king's servants that ministered unto him, There is nothing done for him.

[700] Romans 13:3-4. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Will you then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and you shall have praise of the same: For he is the minister of God to you for good. But if you do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

[701] Proverbs 29:15. The rod and reproof give wisdom: but a child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame. 1 Peter 2:14. Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well.

[702] Isaiah 1:10, 17. Hear the word of the LORD, you rulers of Sodom; give ear unto the law of our God, you people of Gomorrah.... Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow. See Job 29:12-17.

[703] Ephesians 6:4. And, you fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

[704] 1 Timothy 5:8. But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he has denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

[705] 1 Timothy 4:12. Let no man despise your youth; but be you an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity. See Titus 2:3-5.

[706] 1 Kings 3:28. And all Israel heard of the judgment which the king had judged; and they feared the king: for they saw that the wisdom of God was in him, to do judgment.

[707] Titus 2:15. These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

Q. 130. What are the sins of superiors?

A. The sins of superiors are, besides the neglect of the duties required of them,[708] and inordinate seeking of themselves,[709] their own glory,[710] ease, profit, or pleasure;[711] commanding things unlawful,[712] or not in the power of inferiors to perform;[713] counseling,[714] encouraging,[715] or favoring them in that which is evil;[716] dissuading, discouraging, or discountenancing them in that which is good;[717] correcting them unduly;[718] careless exposing, or leaving them to wrong, temptation, and danger;[719] provoking them to wrath;[720] or any way dishonoring themselves, or lessening their authority, by an unjust, indiscreet, rigorous, or remiss behaviour.[721]

[708] Ezekiel 34:2-4. Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy, and say unto them, Thus says the Lord GOD unto the shepherds; Woe be to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! should not the shepherds feed the flocks? you eat the fat, and you clothe you with the wool, you kill them that are fed: but you feed not the flock. The diseased have you not strengthened, neither have you healed that which was sick, neither have you bound up that which was broken, neither have you brought again that which was driven away, neither have you sought that which was lost; but with force and with cruelty have you ruled them.

[709] Philippians 2:21. For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's.

[710] John 5:44. How can you believe, which receive honor one of another, and seek not the honor that cometh from God only? See John 7:18.

[711] Isaiah 56:10-11. His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber. Yea, they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand: they all look to their own way, every one for his gain, from his quarter. See Deuteronomy 17:17.

[712] Acts 4:17-18. But that it spread no further among the people, let us straitly threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name. And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus. See Daniel 3:4-6.

[713] Exodus 5:18. Go therefore now, and work; for there shall no straw be given you, yet shall you deliver the tale of bricks. See verses 10-19. Matthew 23:2, 4.

[714] Matthew 14:8. And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptist's head in a charger. See Mark 6:24.

[715] 2 Samuel 13:28. Now Absalom had commanded his servants, saying, Mark you now when Amnon's heart is merry with wine, and when I say unto you, Smite Amnon; then kill him, fear not: have not I commanded you? be courageous, and be valiant.

[716] Jeremiah 6:13-14. For from the least of them even unto the greatest of them every one is given to covetousness; and from the prophet even unto the priest every one dealeth falsely. They have healed also the hurt of the daughter of my people slightly, saying, Peace, peace; when there is no peace. Judges 20:13-14. Now therefore deliver us the men, the children of Belial, which are in Gibeah, that we may put them to death, and put away evil from Israel. But the children of Benjamin would not hearken to the voice of their brethren the children of Israel. But the children of Benjamin gathered themselves together out of the cities unto Gibeah, to go out to battle against the children of Israel. See entire chapter.

[717] John 7:46-49. The officers answered, Never man spoke like this man. Then answered them the Pharisees, Are you also deceived? Have any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him? But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed. See Colossians 3:21; Exodus 5:17; John 9:28.

[718] 1 Peter 2:18-20. Servants, be subject to your masters with all fear; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward. For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is it, if, when you be buffeted for your faults, you shall take it patiently? but if, when you do well, and suffer for it, you take it patiently, this is acceptable with God. Deuteronomy 25:3. Forty stripes he may give him, and not exceed: lest, if he should exceed, and beat him above these with many stripes, then your brother should seem vile unto thee.

[719] Genesis 38:11, 26. Then said Judah to Tamar his daughter in law, Remain a widow at your father's house, till Shelah my son be grown: for he said, Lest peradventure he die also, as his brethren did. And Tamar went and dwelt in her father's house.... And Judah acknowledged them, and said, She has been more righteous than I; because that I gave her not to Shelah my son. And he knew her again no more. Acts 18:17. Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment seat. And Gallio cared for none of those things. See 1 Samuel 23:15-17; Leviticus 19:29; Isaiah 58:7.

[720] Ephesians 6:4. And, you fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

[721] Genesis 9:21. And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. 1 Kings 12:13-16. And the king answered the people roughly, and forsook the old men's counsel that they gave him; And spoke to them after the counsel of the young men, saying, My father made your yoke heavy, and I will add to your yoke: my father also chavised you with whips, but I will chavise you with scorpions. Wherefore the king hearkened not unto the people; for the cause was from the LORD, that he might perform his saying, which the LORD spoke by Ahijah the Shilonite unto Jeroboam the son of Nebat. So when all Israel saw that the king hearkened not unto them, the people answered the king, saying, What portion have we in David? neither have we inheritance in the son of Jesse: to your tents, O Israel: now see to your own house, David. So Israel departed unto their tents. 1 Kings 1:6. And his father had not displeased him at any time in saying, Why have you done so? and he also was a very goodly man; and his mother bare him after Absalom. See 1 Samuel 2:29-31; 3:13.

Q. 131. What are the duties of equals?

A. The duties of equals are, to regard the dignity and worth of each other,[722] in giving honor to go one before another;[723] and to rejoice in each others' gifts and advancement, as their own.[724]

[722] 1 Peter 2:17. Honor all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king.

[723] Romans 12:10. Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honor preferring one another. Philippians 2:3. Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

[724] Romans 12:15-16. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits. Philippians 2:3. Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

Q. 132. What are the sins of equals?

A. The sins of equals are, besides the neglect of the duties required,[725] the undervaluing of the worth,[726] envying the gifts,[727] grieving at the advancement of prosperity one of another;[728] and usurping pre-eminence one over another.[729]

[725] Romans 13:8. Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loves another has fulfilled the law.

[726] 2 Timothy 3:3. Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good. See Proverbs 14:21; Isaiah 65:5.

[727] Acts 7:9. And the patriarchs, moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him. Galatians 5:26. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

[728] Numbers 12:2. And they said, Has the LORD indeed spoken only by Moses? has he not spoken also by us?

And the LORD heard it.

[729] 3 John 9. I wrote unto the church: but Diotrephes, who loves to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not. Luke 22:24. And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

Q. 133. What is the reason annexed to the fifth commandment, the more to enforce it?

A. The reason annexed to the fifth commandment, in these words, That your days may be long upon the land which the Lord your God giveth you,[730] is an express promise of long life and prosperity, as far as it shall serve for God's glory and their own good, to all such as keep this commandment.[731]

[730] Exodus 20:12. Honor your father and your mother: that your days may be long upon the land which the LORD your God giveth thee.

[731] Ephesians 6:2-3. Honor your father and mother; which is the first commandment with promise; That it may be well with you, and you may live long on the earth. See Deuteronomy 5:16; 1 Kings 8:25.

Q. 134. Which is the sixth commandment?

A. The sixth commandment is, You shall not kill.[732]

[732] Exodus 20:13. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:17.

Q. 135. What are the duties required in the sixth commandment?

A. The duties required in the sixth commandment are all careful studies, and lawful endeavors, to preserve the life of ourselves[733] and others[734] by resisting all thoughts and purposes,[735] subduing all passions,[736] and avoiding all occasions,[737] temptations,[738] and practices, which tend to the unjust taking away the life of any;[739] by just defence of it against violence,[740] patient bearing of the hand of God,[741] quietness of mind,[742] cheerfulness of spirit;[743] a sober use of meat,[744] drink,[745] physic,[746] sleep,[747] labor,[748] and recreations;[749] by charitable thoughts,[750] love,[751] compassion,[752] meekness, gentleness, kindness;[753] peaceable,[754] mild and courteous speeches and behaviour;[755] forbearance, readiness to be reconciled, patient bearing and forgiving of injuries, and requiting good for evil;[756] comforting and succouring the distressed and protecting and defending the innocent.[757]

[733] Ephesians 5:28-29. So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church.

[734] 1 Kings 18:4. For it was so, when Jezebel cut off the prophets of the LORD, that Obadiah took an hundred prophets, and hid them by fifty in a cave, and fed them with bread and water.)

[735] Jeremiah 26:15-16. But know you for certain, that if you put me to death, you shall surely bring innocent blood upon yourselves, and upon this city, and upon the inhabitants of it: for of a truth the LORD has sent me unto you to speak all these words in your ears. Then said the princes and all the people unto the priests and to the prophets; This man is not worthy to die: for he has spoken to us in the name of the LORD our God. See Acts 23:12, 16-17, 21, 27.

[736] Ephesians 4:26-27. Be you angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: Neither give place to the devil.

[737] 2 Samuel 2:22-23. And Abner said again to Asahel, Turn you aside from following me: wherefore should I smite you to the ground? how then should I hold up my face to Joab your brother? Howbeit he refused to turn aside: wherefore Abner with the hinder end of the spear smote him under the fifth rib, that the spear came out behind him; and he fell down there, and died in the same place: and it came to pass, that as many as came to the place where Asahel fell down and died stood still. Deuteronomy 22:8. When you buldest a new house, then you shall make a battlement for your roof, that you bring not blood upon your house, if any man fall from thence.

[738] Matthew 4:6-7. And says unto him, If you be the Son of God, cast yourself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear you up, lest at any time you dash your foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, You shall not tempt the Lord your God. Proverbs 1:10-11, 15-16. My son, if sinners entice you, consent you not. If they say, Come with us, let us lay wait for blood, let us lurk privily for the innocent without cause.... My son, walk not you in the way with them; refrain your foot from their path: For their feet run to evil, and make havee to shed blood.

[739] Genesis 37:21-22. And Reuben heard it, and he delivered him out of their hands; and said, Let us not kill him. And Reuben said unto them, Shed no blood, but cast him into this pit that is in the wilderness, and lay no hand upon him; that he might rid him out of their hands, to deliver him to his father again. See 1 Samuel 24:12; 26:9-11.

[740] Psalm 82:4. Deliver the poor and needy: rid them out of the hand of the wicked. Proverbs 24:11-12. If you forbear to deliver them that are drawn unto death, and those that are ready to be slain; If you sayest, Behold, we knew it not; does not he that pondereth the heart consider it? and he that keepeth your soul, does not he know it? and shall not he render to every man according to his works? See 1 Samuel 14:45; Jeremiah 38:7-13.

[741] James 5:10-11. Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience. Behold, we count them happy which endure. you have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy. Hebrews 12:9. Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? See 2 Samuel 16:10-12.

[742] 1 Thessalonians 4:11. And that you study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, as we commanded you. 1 Peter 3:3-4. Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. Psalm 37:8, 11. Cease from anger, and forsake wrath: fret not yourself in any wise to do evil....But the meek shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace.

[743] Proverbs 17:22. A merry heart doeth good like a medicine: but a broken spirit drieth the bones.

[744] Proverbs 23:20. Be not among winebibbers; among riotous eaters of flesh. Proverbs 25:16, 27. Have you found honey? eat so much as is sufficient for you, lest you be filled therewith, and vomit it.... It is not good to eat much honey: so for men to search their own glory is not glory.

[745] 1 Timothy 5:23. Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for your stomach's sake and your often infirmities.

[746] Isaiah 38:21. For Isaiah had said, Let them take a lump of figs, and lay it for a plaster upon the boil, and he shall recover.

[747] Psalm 127:2. It is vain for you to rise up early, to sit up late, to eat the bread of sorrows: for so he giveth his beloved sleep.

[748] 2 Thessalonians 3:12. Now them that are such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread. See Ecclesiastes 5:12.

[749] Ecclesiastes 3:4, 11. A time to weep, and a time to laugh; a time to mourn, and a time to dance.... He has made every thing beautiful in his time: also he has set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God makes from the beginning to the end. Mark 6:31. And he said unto them, Come you yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while: for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

[750] 1 Samuel 19:4-5. And Jonathan spoke good of David unto Saul his father, and said unto him, Let not the king sin against his servant, against David; because he has not sinned against you, and because his works have been to thee-ward very good: For he did put his life in his hand, and slew the Philistine, and the LORD wrought a great salvation for all Israel: you sawest it, and didst rejoice: wherefore then will you sin against innocent blood, to slay David without a cause? See 1 Samuel 22:13-14.

[751] Romans 13:10. Love worketh no ill to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

[752] Luke 10:33-34. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him, And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

[753] Colossians 3:12-13. Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering; Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

[754] James 3:17. But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy.

[755] 1 Peter 3:8-11. Finally, be you all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous: Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing; knowing that you are thereunto called, that you should inherit a blessing. For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile: Let him eschew evil, and do good; let him seek peace, and ensue it. 1 Corinthians 4:12-13. And labor, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it: Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and are the offscouring of all things unto this day. See Proverbs 15:1; Judges 8:1-3.

[756] Matthew 5:24. Leave there your gift before the altar, and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift. Ephesians 4:2, 32. With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love.... And be you kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake has forgiven you. Romans 12:17, 20-21. Recompense to no man evil for evil.... Therefore if your enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing you shall heap coals of fire on his head. Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

[757] 1 Thessalonians 5:14. Now we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feeble minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men. Matthew 25:35-36. For I was an hungered, and you gave me meat: I was thirsty, and you gave me drink: I was a stranger, and you took me in: Naked, and you clothed me: I was sick, and you visited me: I was in prison, and you came unto me. Proverbs 31:8-9. Open your mouth for the dumb in the cause of all such as are appointed to destruction. Open your mouth, judge righteously, and plead the cause of the poor and needy. See Job 31:19-20; Isaiah 58:7.

Q. 136. What are the sins forbidden in the sixth commandment?

A. The sins forbidden in the sixth commandment are, all taking away the life of ourselves,[758] or of others,[759] except in case of public justice,[760] lawful war,[761] or necessary defence;[762] the neglecting or withdrawing the lawful and necessary means of preservation of life;[763] sinful anger,[764] hatred,[765] envy,[766] desire of revenge;[767] all excessive passions,[768] distracting cares;[769] immoderate use of meat, drink,[770] labor,[771] and recreations;[772] provoking words,[773] oppression,[774] quarreling,[775] striking, wounding,[776] and whatever else tends to the destruction of the life of any.[777]

[758] Acts 16:28. But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do yourself no harm: for we are all here.

[759] Genesis 9:6. Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed: for in the image of God made he man.

[760] Numbers 35:31, 33. Moreover you shall take no satisfaction for the life of a murderer, which is guilty of death: but he shall be surely put to death.... So you shall not pollute the land in which you are: for blood it defileth the land: and the land cannot be cleansed of the blood that is shed in

it, but by the blood of him that shed it. Romans 13:4. For he is the minister of God to you for good. But if you do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

[761] See Deuteronomy 20 compared with Hebrews 11:32-34. And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthah; of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets: Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions. Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

[762] Exodus 22:2. If a thief be found breaking up, and be smitten that he die, there shall no blood be shed for him.

[763] Matthew 25:42-43. For I was an hungered, and you gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and you gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and you took me not in: naked, and you clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and you visited me not. James 2:15-16. If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be you warmed and filled; notwithstanding you give them not those things which are needful to the body; what does it profit?

[764] Matthew 5:22. But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.

[765] 1 John 3:15. Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him. Leviticus 19:17. You shall not hate your brother in your heart: you shall in any wise rebuke your neighbor, and not suffer sin upon him.

[766] Proverbs 14:30. A sound heart is the life of the flesh: but envy the rottenness of the bones.

[767] Romans 12:19. Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says the Lord.

[768] Ephesians 4:31. Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice.

[769] Matthew 6:31, 34. Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?... Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil of it.

[770] Luke 21:34. And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. Romans 13:13. Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

[771] Ecclesiastes 12:12. And further, by these, my son, be admonished: of making many books there is no end; and much study is a weariness of the flesh. Ecclesiastes 2:22-23. For what has man of all his labor, and of the vexation of his heart, in which he has labored under the sun? For all his days are sorrows, and his travail grief; yea, his heart taketh not rest in the night. This is also vanity.

[772] Isaiah 5:12. And the harp, and the viol, the tabret, and pipe, and wine, are in their feasts: but they regard not the work of the LORD, neither consider the operation of his hands.

[773] Proverbs 15:1. A soft answer turneth away wrath: but grievous words stir up anger. Proverbs 12:18. There is that speaketh like the piercings of a sword: but the tongue of the wise is health.

[774] Exodus 1:14. And they made their lives bitter with hard bondage, in mortar, and in brick, and in all manner of service in the field: all their service, in which they made them serve, was with rigour. See Isaiah 3:15.

[775] Galatians 5:15. But if you bite and devour one another, take heed that you be not consumed one of another. Proverbs 23:29. Who has woe? who has sorrow? who has contentions? who has babbling? who has wounds without cause? who has redness of eyes?

[776] Numbers 35:16-17. And if he smite him with an instrument of iron, so that he die, he is a murderer: the murderer shall surely be put to death. And if he smite him with throwing a stone, wherewith he may die, and he die, he is a murderer: the murderer shall surely be put to death. See verses 18-21.

[777] Exodus 21:29. But if the ox were wont to push with his horn in time past, and it has been testified to his owner, and he has not kept him in, but that he has killed a man or a woman; the ox shall be stoned, and his owner also shall be put to death. See verses 18-36.

Q. 137. Which is the seventh commandment?

A. The seventh commandment is, You shall not commit adultery.[778] [778] Exodus 20:14. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:18.

Q. 138. What are the duties required in the seventh commandment?

A. The duties required in the seventh commandment are, chaste in body, mind, affections,[779] words,[780] and behavior;[781] and the preservation of it in ourselves and others;[782] watchfulness over the eyes and all the senses;[783] temperance,[784] keeping of chaste company,[785] modesty in apparel;[786] marriage by those that have not the gift of continency,[787] conjugal love,[788] and cohabitation;[789] diligent labor in our callings;[790] shunning all occasions of uncleanness, and resisting temptations thereunto.[791]

[779] 1 Thessalonians 4:4-5. That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honor, Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God. Job 31:1. I made a covenant with my eyes; why then should I think upon a maid? 1 Corinthians 7:34. There is difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

[780] Ephesians 4:29. Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers. Colossians 4:6. Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how you ought to answer every man.

[781] 1 Peter 3:2. While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear.

[782] 1 Corinthians 7:2-5, 34-36. Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband. Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband. The wife has not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband has not power of his own body, but the wife. Defraud you not one the other, except it is with consent for a time, that you may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency....There is difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth

for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband. And this I speak for your own profit; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend upon the Lord without distraction. But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry.

[783] Matthew 5:28. But I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart. Job 31:1. I made a covenant with my eyes; why then should I think upon a maid?

[784] Acts 24:24-25. And after certain days, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ. And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go your way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.

[785] Proverbs 2:16-20. To deliver you from the strange woman, even from the stranger which flattereth with her words; Which forsaketh the guide of her youth, and forgetteth the covenant of her God. For her house inclineth unto death, and her paths unto the dead. None that go unto her return again, neither take they hold of the paths of life. That you may walk in the way of good men, and keep the paths of the righteous.

[786] 1 Timothy 2:9. In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array.

[787] 1 Corinthians 7:2, 9. Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.... But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.

[788] Proverbs 5:19-20. Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy you at all times; and be you ravished always with her love. And why will thou, my son, be ravished with a strange woman, and embrace the bosom of a stranger?

[789] 1 Peter 3:7. Likewise, you husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honor unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered. 1 Corinthians 7:5. Defraud you not one the other, except it is with consent for a time, that you may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

[790] Proverbs 31:11, 27-28. The heart of her husband does safely trust in her, so that he shall have no need of spoil.... She looketh well to the ways of her household, and eateth not the bread of idleness. Her children arise up, and call her blessed; her husband also, and he praiseth her.

[791] Proverbs 5:8. Remove your way far from her, and come not nigh the door of her house. See Genesis 39:8-10.

Q. 139. What are the sins forbidden in the seventh commandment?

A. The sins forbidden in the seventh commandment, besides the neglect of the duties required,[792] are, adultery, fornication,[793] rape, incest,[794] sodomy, and all unnatural lusts;[795] all unclean imaginations, thoughts, purposes, and affections;[796] all corrupt or filthy communications, or listening thereunto;[797] wanton looks,[798] impudent or light behaviour, immodest apparel;[799] prohibiting of lawful,[800] and dispensing with unlawful marriages;[801] allowing, tolerating, keeping of stews, and resorting to them;[802] entangling vows of single life,[803] undue delay of marriage,[804] having more wives or husbands than one at the same time;[805] unjust divorce,[806] or desertion;[807] idleness, gluttony, drunkenness,[808] unchastity

company;[809] lascivious songs, books, pictures, dancings, stage plays;[810] and all other provocations to, or acts of uncleanness, either in ourselves or others.[811]

[792] Proverbs 5:7. Hear me now therefore, O you children, and depart not from the words of my mouth. See Proverbs 4:23, 27.

[793] Hebrews 13:4. Marriage is honorable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. Ephesians 5:5. For this you know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of God. See Galatians 5:19.

[794] 2 Samuel 13:14. Howbeit he would not hearken unto her voice: but, being stronger than she, forced her, and lay with her. 1 Corinthians 5:1. It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. Mark 6:18. For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for you to have your brother's wife.

[795] Romans 1:24, 26-27. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves.... For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet. Leviticus 20:15-16. And if a man lie with a beast, he shall surely be put to death: and you shall slay the beast. And if a woman approach unto any beast, and lie down thereto, you shall kill the woman, and the beast: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them.

[796] Matthew 5:28. But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart. Matthew 15:19. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies. Colossians 3:5. Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry.

[797] Ephesians 5:3-4. But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; Neither fillyourss, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. See Proverbs 7:5, 21-22.

[798] Isaiah 3:16. Moreover the LORD says, Because the daughters of Zion are haughty, and walk with stretched forth necks and wanton eyes, walking and mincing as they go, and making a tinkling with their feet. 2 Peter 2:14. Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children.

[799] Proverbs 7:10, 13. And, behold, there met him a woman with the attire of an harlot, and subtle of heart.... So she caught him, and kissed him, and with an impudent face said unto him....

[800] 1 Timothy 4:3. Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God has created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

[801] Mark 6:18. For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for you to have your brother's wife. Malachi 2:11- 12. Judah has dealt treacherously, and an abomination is committed in Israel and in Jerusalem; for Judah has profaned the holiness of the LORD which he loved, and has married the daughter of a strange god. The LORD will cut off the man that doeth this, the master and the scholar, out of the tabernacles of Jacob, and him that offereth an offering unto the LORD of hosts. See Leviticus 18:1-21.

[802] 1 Kings 15:12. And he took away the sodomites out of the land, and removed all the idols that his fathers had made. 2 Kings 23:7. And he brake down the houses of the sodomites, that were by the house of the LORD, where the women wove hangings for the grove. Leviticus 19:29. Do not prostitute your daughter, to cause her to be a whore; lest the land fall to whoredom, and the land become full of wickedness. Jeremiah 5:7. How shall I pardon you for this? your children have forsaken me, and sworn by them that are no gods: when I had fed them to the full, they then committed adultery, and assembled themselves by troops in the harlots' houses. See Deuteronomy 23:17- 18; Proverbs 7:24-27.

[803] Matthew 19:10-11. His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry. But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given.

[804] 1 Corinthians 7:7-9. For I would that all men were even as I myself. But every man has his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that. I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I. But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn. Genesis 38:26. And Judah acknowledged them, and said, She has been more righteous than I; because that I gave her not to Shelah my son. And he knew her again no more.

[805] Malachi 2:14-15. Yet you say, Wherefore? Because the LORD has been witness between you and the wife of your youth, against whom you have dealt treacherously: yet is she your companion, and the wife of your covenant. And did not he make one? Yet had he the residue of the spirit. And wherefore one? That he might seek a godly seed. Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth. Matthew 19:5. And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh?

[806] Malachi 2:16. For the LORD, the God of Israel, says that he hateth putting away: for one covereth violence with his garment, says the LORD of hosts: therefore take heed to your spirit, that you deal not treacherously. Matthew 5:32. But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery. Matthew 19:8- 9. He says unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it is for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away does commit adultery.

[807] 1 Corinthians 7:12-13. But to the rest speak I, not the Lord: If any brother has a wife that believes not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. And the woman which has an husband that believes not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

[808] Ezekiel 16:49. Behold, this was the iniquity of your sister Sodom, pride, fulness of bread, and abundance of idleness was in her and in her daughters, neither did she strengthen the hand of the poor and needy. See Proverbs 23:30-33.

[809] Genesis 39:19. And it came to pass, when his master heard the words of his wife, which she spoke unto him, saying, After this manner did your servant to me; that his wrath was kindled. See Proverbs 5:8.

[810] Ephesians 5:4. Neither filyourss, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. Romans 13:13. Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. 1 Peter 4:3. For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in

lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries. See Ezekiel 23:14-16; Isaiah 3:16; 23:15-17; Mark 6:22.

[811] 2 Kings 9:30. And when Jehu was come to Jezreel, Jezebel heard of it; and she painted her face, and tired her head, and looked out at a window. Jeremiah 4:30. And when you art spoiled, what will you do? Though you clothest yourself with crimson, though you deckest you with ornaments of gold, though you rentest your face with painting, in vain shall you make yourself fair; your lovers will despise you, they will seek your life. Ezekiel 23:40. And furthermore, that you have sent for men to come from far, unto whom a messenger was sent; and, lo, they came: for whom you didst wash yourself, paintedst your eyes, and deckedst yourself with ornaments.

Q. 140. Which is the eighth commandment?

A. The eighth commandment is, You shall not steal.[812]

[812] Exodus 20:15. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:19.

Q. 141. What are the duties required in the eighth commandment?

A. The duties required in the eighth commandment are, truth, faithfulness, and justice in contracts and commerce between man and man;[813] rendering to everyone his due;[814] restitution of goods unlawfully detained from the right owners of it;[815] giving and lending freely, according to our abilities, and the necessities of others;[816] moderation of our judgments, wills, and affections concerning worldly goods;[817] a provident care and study to get,[818] keep, use, and dispose these things which are necessary and convenient for the sustentation of our nature, and suitable to our condition;[819] a lawful calling,[820] and diligence in it;[821] frugality;[822] avoiding unnecessary lawsuits,[823] and suretiship, or other like engagements;[824] and an endeavor, by all just and lawful means, to procure, preserve, and further the wealth and outward estate of others, as well as our own.[825]

[813] Psalm 15:2, 4. He that walketh uprightly, and worketh righteousness, and speaketh the truth in his heart.... In whose eyes a vile person is contemned; but he honoreth them that fear the LORD. He that sweareth to his own hurt, and changeth not. Micah 6:8. He has showed you, O man, what is good; and what does the LORD require of you, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with your God? Zechariah 8:16-17. These are the things that you shall do; Speak you every man the truth to his neighbor; execute the judgment of truth and peace in your gates: And let none of you imagine evil in your hearts against his neighbor; and love no false oath: for all these are things that I hate, says the LORD. See Zechariah 7:4, 10.

[814] Romans 13:7. Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor.

[815] Leviticus 6:2-5. If a soul sin, and commit a trespass against the LORD, and lie unto his neighbor in that which was delivered him to keep, or in fellowship, or in a thing taken away by violence, or has deceived his neighbor; Or have found that which was lost, and lieth concerning it, and sweareth falsely; in any of all these that a man doeth, sinning in it: Then it shall be, because he has sinned, and is guilty, that he shall restore that which he took violently away, or the thing which he has deceitfully gotten, or that which was delivered him to keep, or the lost thing which he found, Or all that about which he has sworn falsely; he shall even restore it in the principal, and shall add the fifth part more thereto, and give it unto him to whom it appertaineth, in the day of his trespass offering. See Luke 19:8.

[816] Luke 6:30, 38. Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away your goods ask them not again.... Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that you mete withal it shall be measured to you again. 1 John 3:17. But whoso has this

world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him? Ephesians 4:28. Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labor, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. Galatians 6:10. As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.

[817] 1 Timothy 6:6-9. But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. See Galatians 6:14.

[818] 1 Timothy 5:8. But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he has denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

[819] Proverbs 27:23. Be you diligent to know the state of your flocks, and look well to your herds. See verses 24-27. Ecclesiastes 2:24. There is nothing better for a man, than that he should eat and drink, and that he should make his soul enjoy good in his labor. This also I saw, that it was from the hand of God. Ecclesiastes 3:12-13. I know that there is no good in them, but for a man to rejoice, and to do good in his life. And also that every man should eat and drink, and enjoy the good of all his labor, it is the gift of God. 1 Timothy 6:17-18. Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy; That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate. See Isaiah 38:1; Matthew 11:8.

[820] 1 Corinthians 7:20. Let every man abide in the same calling to which he was called. See Genesis 2:15; 3:19.

[821] Ephesians 4:28. Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labor, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. Proverbs 10:4. He becometh poor that dealeth with a slack hand: but the hand of the diligent makes rich. Romans 12:11. Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord.

[822] John 6:12. When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost. Proverbs 21:20. There is treasure to be desired and oil in the dwelling of the wise; but a foolish man spendeth it up.

[823] 1 Corinthians 6:1. Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints? See verses 2-9.

[824] Proverbs 11:15. He that is surety for a stranger shall smart for it: and he that hateth suretship is sure. See Proverbs 6:1-6.

[825] Leviticus 25:35. And if your brother be waxen poor, and fallen in decay with thee; then you shall relieve him: yea, though he be a stranger, or a sojourner; that he may live with thee. Philippians 2:4. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. See Deuteronomy 22:1-4; Exodus 23:4-5; Genesis 47:14, 20; Matthew 22:39.

Q. 142. What are the sins forbidden in the eighth commandment?

A. The sins forbidden in the eighth commandment, besides the neglect of the duties required,[826] are, theft,[827] robbery,[828] man-stealing,[829] and receiving any thing that is stolen;[830] fraudulent dealing,[831] false weights and measures,[832] removing landmarks,[833] injustice and unfaithfulness in contracts between man and man,[834] or in matters of trust;[835] oppression,[836] extortion,[837] usury,[838] bribery,[839] vexatious lawsuits,[840] unjust inclosures and depopulations;[841] ingrossing commodities to enhance the price;[842] unlawful

callings,[843] and all other unjust or sinful ways of taking or withholding from our neighbor what belongs to him, or of enriching ourselves;[844] covetousness;[845] inordinate prizing and affecting worldly goods;[846] distrustful and distracting cares and studies in getting, keeping, and using them;[847] envying at the prosperity of others;[848] as likewise idleness,[849] prodigality, wasteful gaming; and all other ways whereby we do unduly prejudice our own outward estate,[850] and defrauding ourselves of the due use and comfort of that estate which God has given us.[851]

[826] James 2:15-16. If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be you warmed and filled; notwithstanding you give them not those things which are needful to the body; what does it profit? 1 John 3:17. But whoso has this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

[827] Ephesians 4:28. Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labor, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.

[828] Psalm 62:10. Trust not in oppression, and become not vain in robbery: if riches increase, set not your heart upon them.

[829] 1 Timothy 1:10. For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine.

[830] Proverbs 29:24. Whoso is partner with a thief hateth his own soul: he heareth cursing, and bewrayeth it not. Psalm 50:18. When you sawest a thief, then you consentedst with him, and have been partaker with adulterers.

[831] 1 Thessalonians 4:6. That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified. Leviticus 19:13. You shall not defraud your neighbor, neither rob him: the wages of him that is hired shall not abide with you all night until the morning.

[832] Proverbs 11:1. A false balance is abomination to the LORD: but a just weight is his delight. Proverbs 20:10. Divers weights, and divers measures, both of them are alike abomination to the LORD.

[833] Deuteronomy 19:14. You shall not remove your neighbor's landmark, which they of old time have set in your inheritance, which you shall inherit in the land that the LORD your God giveth you to possess it. See Proverbs 23:10.

[834] Amos 8:5. Saying, When will the new moon be gone, that we may sell corn? and the sabbath, that we may set forth wheat, making the ephah small, and the shekel great, and falsifying the balances by deceit? Psalm 37:21. The wicked borroweth, and payeth not again: but the righteous showeth mercy, and giveth.

[835] Luke 16:10-12. He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much. If therefore you have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? And if you have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?

[836] Ezekiel 22:29. The people of the land have used oppression, and exercised robbery, and have vexed the poor and needy: yea, they have oppressed the stranger wrongfully. Leviticus 25:17. you shall not therefore oppress one another; but you shall fear your God: for I am the LORD your God.

[837] Matthew 23:25. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. Ezekiel 22:12. In you have they taken gifts to shed blood; you have taken usury and increase, and you have greedily gained of your neighbors by extortion, and have forgotten me, says the Lord GOD.

[838] Psalm 15:5. He that putteth not out his money to usury, nor taketh reward against the innocent. He that doeth these things shall never be moved.

[839] Job 15:34. For the congregation of hypocrites shall be desolate, and fire shall consume the tabernacles of bribery.

[840] 1 Corinthians 6:6-8. But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers. Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because you go to law one with another. Why do you not rather take wrong? why do you not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded? Nay, you do wrong, and defraud, and that your brethren. Proverbs 3:29-30. Devise not evil against your neighbor, seeing he dwelleth securely by thee. Strive not with a man without cause, if he have done you no harm.

[841] Isaiah 5:8. Woe unto them that join house to house, that lay field to field, till there be no place, that they may be placed alone in the midst of the earth! Micah 2:2. And they covet fields, and take them by violence; and houses, and take them away: so they oppress a man and his house, even a man and his heritage.

[842] Proverbs 11:26. He that withholdeth corn, the people shall curse him: but blessing shall be upon the head of him that selleth it.

[843] Acts 19:19. Many of them also which used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver. See verses 24-25.

[844] James 5:4. Behold, the hire of the laborers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth. Proverbs 21:6. The getting of treasures by a lying tongue is a vanity tossed to and fro of them that seek death. See Job 20:19.

[845] Luke 12:15. And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he posseseth.

[846] 1 Timothy 6:5. Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw yourself. Colossians 3:2. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. 1 John 2:15-16. Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. See Proverbs 23:5; Psalm 62:10.

[847] Matthew 6:25, 31, 34. Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what you shall eat, or what you shall drink; nor yet for your body, what you shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?... Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?... Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil of it. Ecclesiastes 5:12. The sleep of a laboring man is sweet, whether he eat little or much: but the abundance of the rich will not suffer him to sleep.

[848] Psalm 73:3. For I was envious at the foolish, when I saw the prosperity of the wicked. See Psalm 37:1, 7.

[849] 2 Thessalonians 3:10-11. For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat. For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies. See Proverbs 18:9.

[850] Proverbs 21:17. He that loves pleasure shall be a poor man: he that loves wine and oil shall not be rich. Proverbs 23:20-21. Be not among winebibbers; among riotous eaters of flesh: For the drunkard and the glutton shall come to poverty: and drowsiness shall clothe a man with rags. See Proverbs 28:19.

[851] Ecclesiastes 4:8. There is one alone, and there is not a second; yea, he has neither child nor brother: yet is there no end of all his labor; neither is his eye satisfied with riches; neither says he, For whom do I labor, and bereave my soul of good? This is also vanity, yea, it is a sore travail. Ecclesiastes 6:2. A man to whom God has given riches, wealth, and honor, so that he wanteth nothing for his soul of all that he desireth, yet God giveth him not power to eat of it, but a stranger eateth it: this is vanity, and it is an evil disease. 1 Timothy 4:3-5. Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God has created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it is received with thanksgiving: For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer. 1 Timothy 5:8. But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he has denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

Q. 143. Which is the ninth commandment?

A. The ninth commandment is, You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.[852]

[852] Exodus 20:16. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:20.

Q. 144. What are the duties required in the ninth commandment?

A. The duties required in the ninth commandment are, the preserving and promoting of truth between man and man,[853] and the good name of our neighbor, as well as our own:[854] appearing and standing for the truth;[855] and from the heart,[856] sincerely,[857] freely,[858] clearly,[859] and fully,[860] speaking the truth, and only the truth, in matters of judgment and justice,[861] and in all other things whatever;[862] a charitable esteem of our neighbors;[863] loving, desiring, and rejoicing in their good name;[864] sorrowing for,[865] and covering of their infirmities;[866] freely acknowledging of their gifts and graces,[867] defending their innocence;[868] a ready receiving of a good report,[869] and unwillingness to admit of an evil report,[870] concerning them; discouraging tale-bearers,[871] flatterers,[872] and slanderers;[873] love and care of our own good name, and defending it when need requireth;[874] keeping of lawful promises;[875] studying and practicing of whatever things are true, honest, lovely, and of good report.[876]

[853] Zechariah 8:16. These are the things that you shall do; Speak you every man the truth to his neighbor; execute the judgment of truth and peace in your gates. Ephesians 4:25. Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbor: for we are members one of another.

[854] 3 John 12. Demetrius has good report of all men, and of the truth itself: yea, and we also bear record; and you know that our record is true.

[855] Proverbs 31:8-9. Open your mouth for the dumb in the cause of all such as are appointed to destruction. Open thy mouth, judge righteously, and plead the cause of the poor and needy.

[856] Psalm 15:2. He that walketh uprightly, and worketh righteousness, and speaketh the truth in his heart.

[857] 2 Chronicles 19:9. And he charged them, saying, Thus shall you do in the fear of the LORD, faithfully, and with a perfect heart.

[858] 1 Samuel 19:4-5. And Jonathan spoke good of David unto Saul his father, and said unto him, Let not the king sin against his servant, against David; because he has not sinned against you, and because his works have been to thee-ward very good: For he did put his life in his hand, and slew the Philistine, and the LORD wrought a great salvation for all Israel: you sawest it, and didst rejoice: wherefore then will you sin against innocent blood, to slay David without a cause?

[859] Joshua 7:19. And Joshua said unto Achan, My son, give, I pray you, glory to the LORD God of Israel, and make confession unto him; and tell me now what you have done; hide it not from me. See verses 15-20.

[860] 2 Samuel 14:18. Then the king answered and said unto the woman, Hide not from me, I pray you, the thing that I shall ask thee. And the woman said, Let my lord the king now speak. See verses 19-20. Acts 20:27. For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

[861] Leviticus 19:15. you shall do no unrighteousness in judgment: you shall not respect the person of the poor, nor honor the person of the mighty: but in righteousness shall you judge your neighbor. Proverbs 14:5, 25. A faithful witness will not lie: but a false witness will utter lies....A true witness delivereth souls: but a deceitful witness speaketh lies.

[862] 2 Corinthians 1:17-18. When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightness? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea yea, and nay nay? But as God is true, our word toward you was not yea and nay. Ephesians 4:25. Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbor: for we are members one of another. See Colossians 3:9.

[863] Hebrews 6:9. But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. 1 Corinthians 13:7. Beareth all things, believes all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

[864] Romans 1:8. First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world. 2 John 4. I rejoiced greatly that I found of your children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father. 3 John 3-4. For I rejoiced greatly, when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in you, even as you walkest in the truth. I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.

[865] 2 Corinthians 2:4. For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you with many tears; not that ye should be grieved, but that you might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you. 2 Corinthians 12:21. And lest, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail many which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanness and fornication and lasciviousness which they have committed. See Psalm 119:158.

[866] Proverbs 17:9. He that covereth a transgression seeketh love; but he that repeateth a matter separateth very friends. 1 Peter 4:8. And above all things have fervent charity among yourselves: for charity shall cover the multitude of sins.

[867] 1 Corinthians 1:4-5, 7. I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ; That in every thing you are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge.... So that you come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. See 2 Timothy 1:4-5.

[868] 1 Samuel 22:14. Then Ahimelech answered the king, and said, And who is so faithful among all your servants as David, which is the king's son in law, and goeth at your bidding, and is honorable in your house?

[869] 1 Corinthians 13:6-7. Rejoices not in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; Beareth all things, believes all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

[870] Psalm 15:3. He that backbiteth not with his tongue, nor doeth evil to his neighbor, nor taketh up a reproach against his neighbor.

[871] Proverbs 25:23. The north wind driveth away rain: so does an angry countenance a backbiting tongue.

[872] Proverbs 26:24-25. He that hateth dissembleth with his lips, and layeth up deceit within him; When he speaketh fair, believe him not: for there are seven abominations in his heart.

[873] Psalm 101:5. Whoso privily slandereth his neighbor, him will I cut off: him that has an high look and a proud heart will not I suffer.

[874] Proverbs 22:1. A good name is rather to be chosen than great riches, and loving favor rather than silver and gold. John 8:49. Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honor my Father, and you do dishonor me. See 2 Corinthians 11:1-12:13.

[875] Psalm 15:4. In whose eyes a vile person is contemned; but he honoreth them that fear the LORD. He that sweareth to his own hurt, and changeth not.

[876] Philippians 4:8. Finally, brethren, whatever things are true, whatever things are honest, whatever things are just, whatever things are pure, whatever things are lovely, whatever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.

Q. 145. What are the sins forbidden in the ninth commandment?

A. The sins forbidden in the ninth commandment are, all prejudicing the truth, and the good name of our neighbors, as well as our own,[877] especially in public judicature;[878] giving false evidence,[879] suborning false witnesses,[880] wittingly appearing and pleading for an evil cause, out-facing and overbearing the truth;[881] passing unjust sentence,[882] calling evil good, and good evil; rewarding the wicked according to the work of the righteous, and the righteous according to the work of the wicked;[883] forgery,[884] concealing the truth, undue silence in a just cause,[885] and holding our peace when iniquity calleth for either a reproof from ourselves,[886] or complaint to others;[887] speaking the truth unseasonably,[888] or maliciously to a wrong end,[889] or perverting it to a wrong meaning,[890] or in doubtful and equivocal expressions, to the prejudice of truth or justice;[891] speaking untruth,[892] lying,[893] slandering,[894] backbiting,[895] detracting,[896] tale bearing,[897] whispering,[898] scoffing,[899] reviling,[900] rash,[901] harsh,[902] and partial censuring;[903] misconstruing intentions, words, and actions;[904] flattering,[905] vain-glorious boasting;[906] thinking or speaking too highly or too meanly of ourselves or others;[907] denying the gifts and graces of God;[908] aggravating smaller faults;[909] hiding, excusing, or extenuating of sins, when called to a free confession;[910] unnecessary discovering of infirmities;[911] raising false rumors,[912] receiving and countenancing evil reports,[913] and stopping our ears against just defense;[914] evil suspicion;[915] envying or grieving at the deserved credit of any,[916] endeavoring or desiring to impair it,[917] rejoicing in their disgrace and infamy;[918] scornful contempt,[919] fond admiration;[920] breach of lawful promises;[921] neglecting such things as are of good report,[922] and practicing, or not avoiding ourselves, or not hindering what we can in others, such things as procure an ill name.[923]

[877] Luke 3:14. And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely; and be content with your wages. See 1 Samuel 17:28; 2 Samuel 16:3; 1:9-10, 15-16. He said unto me again, Stand, I pray you, upon me, and slay me: for anguish is come upon me, because my life is yet whole in me. So I stood upon him, and slew him, because I was sure that he could not live after that he was fallen: and I took the crown that was upon his head, and the bracelet that was on his arm, and have brought them hither unto my lord.... And David called one of the young men, and said, Go near, and fall upon him. And he smote him that he died. And David said unto him, your blood be upon your head; for your mouth has testified against you, saying, I have slain the LORD'S anointed.

[878] Leviticus 19:15. you shall do no unrighteousness in judgment: you shall not respect the person of the poor, nor honor the person of the mighty: but in righteousness shall you judge your neighbor. See Habakkuk 1:4.

[879] Proverbs 19:5. A false witness shall not be unpunished, and he that speaketh lies shall not escape. See Proverbs 6:16, 19.

[880] Acts 6:13. And set up false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law.

[881] Jeremiah 9:3, 5. And they bend their tongues like their bow for lies: but they are not valiant for the truth upon the earth; for they proceed from evil to evil, and they know not me, says the LORD.... And they will deceive every one his neighbor, and will not speak the truth: they have taught their tongue to speak lies, and weary themselves to commit iniquity. Psalm 12:3-4. The LORD shall cut off all flattering lips, and the tongue that speaketh proud things: Who have said, With our tongue will we prevail; our lips are our own: who is lord over us? See Acts 24:2, 5; Psalm 52:1-4.

[882] Proverbs 17:15. He that justifieth the wicked, and he that condemneth the just, even they both are abomination to the LORD. See 1 Kings 21:9-14.

[883] Isaiah 5:23. Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him!

[884] 1 Kings 21:8. So she wrote letters in Ahab's name, and sealed them with his seal, and sent the letters unto the elders and to the nobles that were in his city, dwelling with Naboth.

[885] Leviticus 5:1. And if a soul sin, and hear the voice of swearing, and is a witness, whether he has seen or known of it; if he do not utter it, then he shall bear his iniquity. Acts 5:3. But Peter said, Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? See verses 8-9; Deuteronomy 13:8; 2 Timothy 4:16.

[886] 1 Kings 1:6. And his father had not displeased him at any time in saying, Why have you done so? and he also was a very goodly man; and his mother bare him after Absalom. Leviticus 19:17. You shall not hate your brother in your heart: you shall in any wise rebuke your neighbor, and not suffer sin upon him.

[887] Isaiah 59:4. None calleth for justice, nor any pleadeth for truth: they trust in vanity, and speak lies; they conceive mischief, and bring forth iniquity.

[888] Proverbs 29:11. A fool uttereth all his mind: but a wise man keepeth it in till afterwards.

[889] 1 Samuel 22:9-10. Then answered Doeg the Edomite, which was set over the servants of Saul, and said, I saw the son of Jesse coming to Nob, to Ahimelech the son of Ahitub. And he inquired of the LORD for him, and gave him victuals, and gave him the sword of Goliath the Philistine. Psalm 52:1-5. Why boastest you yourself in mischief, O mighty man? the goodness of

God endureth continually. your tongue deviseth mischiefs; like a sharp razor, working deceitfully. You lovest evil more than good; and lying rather than to speak righteousness. Selah. You lovest all devouring words, O you deceitful tongue. God shall likewise destroy you for ever, he shall take you away, and pluck you out of your dwelling place, and root you out of the land of the living. Selah.

[890] Psalm 56:5. Every day they wrest my words: all their thoughts are against me for evil. Matthew 26:60-61. But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses, And said, This fellow said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days. See John 2:19.

[891] Genesis 3:5. For God does know that in the day you eat of it, then your eyes shall be opened, and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. See Genesis 26:7, 9.

[892] Isaiah 59:13. In transgressing and lying against the LORD, and departing away from our God, speaking oppression and revolt, conceiving and uttering from the heart words of falsehood.

[893] Colossians 3:9. Lie not one to another, seeing that you have put off the old man with his deeds. See Leviticus 19:11.

[894] Psalm 50:20. You sittest and speakest against your brother; you slanderest your own mother's son. 112 [895] Psalm 15:3. He that backbiteth not with his tongue, nor doeth evil to his neighbor, nor taketh up a reproach against his neighbor.

[896] James 4:11. Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if you judge the law, you art not a doer of the law, but a judge. See Jeremiah 38:4.

[897] Leviticus 19:16. You shall not go up and down as a talebearer among your people: neither shall you stand against the blood of your neighbor: I am the LORD.

[898] Romans 1:29-30. Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, malice; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents.

[899] Genesis 21:9. And Sarah saw the son of Hagar the Egyptian, which she had born unto Abraham, mocking. Galatians 4:29. But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.

[900] 1 Corinthians 6:10. Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

[901] Matthew 7:1. Judge not, that you be not judged.

[902] Acts 28:4. And when the barbarians saw the venomous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom, though he has escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live. See James 2:13.

[903] Genesis 38:24. And it came to pass about three months after, that it was told Judah, saying, Tamar your daughter in law has played the harlot; and also, behold, she is with child by whoredom. And Judah said, Bring her forth, and let her be burnt. Romans 2:1. Therefore you art inexcusable, O man, whosoever you art that judgest: for in what you judgest another, you condemnest yourself; for you that judgest doest the same things.

[904] Romans 3:8. And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just. Psalm 69:10. When I wept, and chastened my soul with fasting, that was to my reproach. See Nehemiah 6:6-8; 1 Samuel 1:13-15; 2 Samuel 10:3.

[905] Psalm 12:2-3. They speak vanity every one with his neighbor: with flattering lips and with a double heart do they speak. The LORD shall cut off all flattering lips, and the tongue that speaketh proud things.

[906] 2 Timothy 3:2. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy.

[907] Luke 18:9, 11. And he spoke this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others.... The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank you, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. Acts 12:22. And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man. Exodus 4:10-14. And Moses said unto the LORD, O my Lord, I am not eloquent, neither heretofore, nor since you have spoken unto your servant: but I am slow of speech, and of a slow tongue. And the LORD said unto him, Who has made man's mouth? or who makes the dumb, or deaf, or the seeing, or the blind? have not I the LORD? Now therefore go, and I will be with your mouth, and teach you what you shall say. And he said, O my Lord, send, I pray you, by the hand of him whom you will send. And the anger of the LORD was kindled against Moses, and he said, Is not Aaron the Levite your brother? I know that he can speak well. And also, behold, he cometh forth to meet thee: and when he seeth you, he will be glad in his heart. See Romans 12:16; Galatians 5:26; 1 Corinthians 4:6.

[908] Luke 9:49-50. And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in your name; and we forbad him, because he followeth not with us. And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against us is for us. 2 Corinthians 10:10. For his letters, say they, are weighty and powerful; but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible. Acts 2:13. Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine. See Job 27:5-6; 4:6.

[909] Matthew 7:3-5. And why beholdest you the mote that is in your brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in your own eye? Or how will you say to your brother, Let me pull out the mote out of your eye; and, behold, a beam is in your own eye? You hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of your own eye; and then shall you see clearly to cast out the mote out of your brother's eye.

[910] Proverbs 28:13. He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy. Genesis 3:12-13. And the man said, The woman whom you gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the LORD God said unto the woman, What is this that you have done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. See Proverbs 30:20; Jeremiah 2:35; 2 Kings 5:25; Genesis 4:9.

[911] Proverbs 25:9-10. Debate your cause with your neighbor himself; and discover not a secret to another: Lest he that heareth it put you to shame, and your infamy turn not away. See Genesis 9:22.

[912] Exodus 23:1. You shall not raise a false report: put not your hand with the wicked to be an unrighteous witness.

[913] Proverbs 29:12. If a ruler hearken to lies, all his servants are wicked. See Psalm 41:7-8.

[914] Acts 7:56-57. And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord. Job 31:13- 14. If I did despise the cause of my manservant or of my

maidservant, when they contended with me; What then shall I do when God riseth up? and when he visiteth, what shall I answer him?

[915] 1 Corinthians 13:5. Does not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil. See 1 Timothy 6:4.

[916] Matthew 21:15. And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David; they were sore displeased. See Numbers 11:29.

[917] Ezra 4:12-13. Be it known unto the king, that the Jews which came up from you to us are come unto Jerusalem, building the rebellious and the bad city, and have set up the walls of it, and joined the foundations. Be it known now unto the king, that, if this city be builded, and the walls set up again, then will they not pay toll, tribute, and custom, and so you shall endamage the revenue of the kings. See Daniel 6:3-4.

[918] Jeremiah 48:27. For was not Israel a derision unto thee? was he found among thieves? for since you spokest of him, you skippered for joy.

[919] Matthew 27:28-29. And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! See Psalm 35:15-16, 21.

[920] Jude 16. These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage. Acts 12:22. And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man.

[921] Romans 1:31. Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful. 2 Timothy 3:3. Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good....

[922] 1 Samuel 2:24. Nay, my sons; for it is no good report that I hear: you make the Lord's people to transgress.

[923] 2 Samuel 13:12-13. And she answered him, Nay, my brother, do not force me; for no such thing ought to be done in Israel: do not you this folly. And I, whither shall I cause my shame to go? and as for you, you shall be as one of the fools in Israel. Now therefore, I pray you, speak unto the king; for he will not withhold me from thee. Proverbs 5:8-9. Remove your way far from her, and come not nigh the door of her house: Lest you give your honor unto others, and your years unto the cruel. Proverbs 6:33. A wound and dishonor shall he get; and his reproach shall not be wiped away.

Q. 146. Which is the tenth commandment?

A. The tenth commandment is, You shall not covet your neighbor's house, you shall not covet their neighbor's wife, nor his man-servant, nor his maid-servant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor anything that is your neighbor's.[924]

[924] Exodus 20:17. Cf. Deuteronomy 5:21.

Q. 147. What are the duties required in the tenth commandment?

A. The duties required in the tenth commandment are, such a full contentment with our own condition,[925] and such a charitable frame of the whole soul toward our neighbor, as that all our inward motions and affections touching him, tend unto, and further all that good which is his.[926]

[925] Hebrews 13:5. Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as you have: for he has said, I will never leave you, nor forsake thee. 1 Timothy 6:6. But godliness with contentment is great gain. See Philippians 4:11.

[926] Job 31:29. If I rejoiced at the destruction of him that hated me, or lifted up myself when evil found him. Romans 12:15. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. See Psalm 122:7-9; 1 Timothy 1:5; Esther 10:3; 1 Corinthians 13:4-7.

Q. 148. What are the sins forbidden in the tenth commandment?

A. The sins forbidden in the tenth commandment are, discontentment with our own estate;[927] envying[928] and grieving at the good of our neighbor,[929] together with all inordinate motions and affections to anything that is his.[930]

[927] 1 Corinthians 10:10. Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the

destroyer. See 1 Kings 21:4; Esther 5:13.

[928] Galatians 5:26. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another. James

3:14, 16. But if you have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth.... For where

envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.

[929] Psalm 112:9-10. He has dispersed, he has given to the poor; his righteousness endureth for ever; his horn

shall be exalted with honor. The wicked shall see it, and be grieved; he shall gnash with his teeth, and melt away:

the desire of the wicked shall perish. See Nehemiah 2:10.

[930] Romans 7:7-8. What shall we say then? is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law:

for I had not known lust, except the law had said, You shall not covet. But sin, taking occasion by the

commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead. Romans 13:9. For

this, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not kill, You shall not steal, You shall not bear false witness,

You shall not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely,

115 You shall love your neighbor as yourself. Colossians 3:5. Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth;

fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry.

Deuteronomy 5:21. Neither shall you desire your neighbor's wife, neither shall you covet your neighbor's house,

his field, or his manservant, or his maidservant, his ox, or his ass, or any thing that is your neighbor's.

Q. 149. Is any man able perfectly to keep the commandments of God?

A. No man is able, either of himself,[931] or by any grace received in this life, perfectly to keep the commandments of God;[932] but does daily break them in thought,[933] word, and deed.[934]

[931] James 3:2. For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and

able also to bridle the whole body. John 15:5. I am the vine, you are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in

him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me you can do nothing. Romans 8:3. For what the law could not

do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin,

condemned sin in the flesh.

[932] Ecclesiastes 7:20. For there is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not. 1 John 1:8, 10. If

we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.... If we say that we have not sinned, we

make him a liar, and his word is not in us. Galatians 5:17. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit

against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that you cannot do the things that you would. Romans

7:18-19. For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

[933] Genesis 6:5. And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. Genesis 8:21. And the LORD smelled a sweet savour; and the LORD said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake; for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done. James 1:14. But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.

[934] Romans 3:9. What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin. See verses 10-19; James 3:2-13.

Q. 150. Are all transgressions of the law of God equally heinous in themselves, and in the sight of God?

A. All transgressions of the law of God are not equally heinous; but some sins in themselves, and by reason of several aggravations, are more heinous in the sight of God than others.[935]

[935] John 19:11. Jesus answered, You couldst have no power at all against me, except it were given you from above: therefore he that delivered me unto you has the greater sin. 1 John 5:16. If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. Hebrews 2:2-3. For if the word spoken by angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward; How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him. See Psalm 78:17, 32, 56; Ezekiel 8:6, 13, 15.

Q. 151. What are those aggravations that make some sins more heinous than others?

A. Sins receive their aggravations,

1. From the persons offending[936] if they be of riper age,[937] greater experience or grace,[938] eminent for profession,[939] gifts,[940] place,[941] office,[942] guides to others,[943] and whose example is likely to be followed by others.[944]
2. From the parties offended:[945] if immediately against God,[946] his attributes,[947] and worship,[948] against Christ, and his grace;[949] the Holy Spirit,[950] his witness,[951] and workings[952] against superiors, men of eminency,[953] and such as we stand especially related and engaged unto;[954] against any of the saints,[955] particularly weak brethren,[956] the souls of them, or any other,[957] and the common good of all or many.[958]
3. From the nature and quality of the offense:[959] if it is against the express letter of the law,[960] break many commandments, contain in it many sins:[961] if not only conceived in the heart, but breaks forth in words and actions,[962] scandalize others,[963] and admit of no reparation:[964] if against means,[965] mercies,[966] judgments,[967] light of nature,[968] conviction of conscience,[969] public or private admonition,[970] censures of the church,[971] civil punishments;[972] and our prayers, purposes, promises,[973] vows,[974] covenants,[975] and engagements to God or men:[976] if done deliberately,[977] wilfully,[978] presumptuously,[979] impudently,[980] boastingly,[981] maliciously,[982] frequently,[983] obstinately,[984] with delight,[985] continuance,[986] or relapsing after repentance.[987]
4. From circumstances of time[988] and place:[989] if on the Lord's day,[990] or other times of divine worship;[991] or immediately before[992] or after these,[993] or other helps to prevent or remedy such miscarriages;[994] if in public, or in the presence of others, who are thereby likely to be provoked or defiled[995].

[936] Jeremiah 2:8. The priests said not, Where is the LORD? and they that handle the law knew me not: the pastors also transgressed against me, and the prophets prophesied by Baal, and walked after things that do not profit.

[937] Job 32:7, 9. I said, Days should speak, and multitude of years should teach wisdom.... Great men are not always wise: neither do the aged understand judgment. Ecclesiastes 4:13. Better is a poor and a wise child than an old and foolish king, who will no more be admonished.

[938] 1 Kings 11:4, 9. For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect with the LORD his God, as was the heart of

David his father.... And the LORD was angry with Solomon, because his heart was turned from the LORD God of Israel, which had appeared unto him twice.

[939] 2 Samuel 12:14. Howbeit, because by this deed you have given great occasion to the enemies of the LORD to blaspheme, the child also that is born unto you shall surely die. 1 Corinthians 5:1. It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.

[940] James 4:17. Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin. Luke 12:47-48. And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

[941] Jeremiah 5:4-5. Therefore I said, Surely these are poor; they are foolish: for they know not the way of the LORD, nor the judgment of their God. I will get me unto the great men, and will speak unto them; for they have known the way of the LORD, and the judgment of their God: but these have altogether broken the yoke, and burst the bonds.

[942] 2 Samuel 12:7-9. And Nathan said to David, You art the man. Thus says the LORD God of Israel, I anointed you king over Israel, and I delivered you out of the hand of Saul; And I gave you your master's house, and your master's wives into your bosom, and gave you the house of Israel and of Judah; and if that had been too little, I would moreover have given unto you such and such things. Wherefore have you despised the commandment of the LORD, to do evil in his sight? you have killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, and have taken his wife to be your wife, and have slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon. Ezekiel 8:11-12. And there stood before them seventy men of the ancients of the house of Israel, and in the midst of them stood Jaazaniah the son of Shaphan, with every man his censer in his hand; and a thick cloud of incense went up. Then said he unto me, Son of man, have you seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? for they say, The LORD seeth us not; the LORD has forsaken the earth.

[943] Romans 2:17-24. Behold, you art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and make your boast of God, And know his will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law; And art confident that you yourself art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness, An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which have the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law. You therefore which teachest another, teachest you not yourself? you that preachest a man should not steal, dost you steal? You that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost you commit adultery? you that abhorrest idols, dost you commit sacrilege? You that makes your boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonorest you God? For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.

[944] Galatians 2:11-14. But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision. And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation. But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest you the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

[945] Psalm 2:12. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and you perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him. Matthew 21:38-39. But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and

let us seize on his inheritance. And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.

[946] 1 Samuel 2:25. If one man sin against another, the judge shall judge him: but if a man sin against the LORD, who shall entreat for him? Notwithstanding they hearkened not unto the voice of their father, because the LORD would slay them. Acts 5:4. Whiles it remained, was it not your own? and after it was sold, was it not in your own power? why have you conceived this thing in your heart? you have not lied unto men, but unto God. Psalm 5:4. For you art not a God that has pleasure in wickedness: neither shall evil dwell with thee.

[947] Romans 2:4. Or despisest you the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth you to repentance?

[948] Malachi 1:8. And if you offer the blind for sacrifice, is it not evil? and if you offer the lame and sick, is it not evil? offer it now unto your governor; will he be pleased with you, or accept your person? says the LORD of hosts. Malachi 1:14. But cursed be the deceiver, which has in his flock a male, and voweth, and sacrificeth unto the Lord a corrupt thing: for I am a great King, says the LORD of hosts, and my name is dreadful among the heathen.

[949] Hebrews 2:2-3. For if the word spoken by angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward; How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him. Hebrews 12:25. See that you refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spoke on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven.

[950] Hebrews 10:28-29. He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and has done despite unto the Spirit of grace? Matthew 12:31-32. Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

[951] Ephesians 4:30. And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby you are sealed unto the day of redemption.

[952] Hebrews 6:4-6. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

[953] Jude 8. Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities. Numbers 12:8-9. With him will I speak mouth to mouth, even apparently, and not in dark speeches; and the similitude of the LORD shall he behold: wherefore then were you not afraid to speak against my servant Moses? And the anger of the LORD was kindled against them; and he departed. Isaiah 3:5. And the people shall be oppressed, every one by another, and every one by his neighbor: the child shall behave himself proudly against the ancient, and the base against the honorable.

[954] Proverbs 30:17. The eye that mocketh at his father, and despiseth to obey his mother, the ravens of the valley shall pick it out, and the young eagles shall eat it. 2 Corinthians 12:15. And I will very gladly spend and be spent for you; though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved. Psalm 55:12-15. For it was not an enemy that reproached me; then I could have borne it:

neither was it he that hated me that did magnify himself against me; then I would have hid myself from him: But it was thou, a man my equal, my guide, and my acquaintance. We took sweet counsel together, and walked unto the house of God in company. Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into hell: for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them.

[955] Zephaniah 2:8, 10-11. I have heard the reproach of Moab, and the revilings of the children of Ammon, whereby they have reproached my people, and magnified themselves against their border.... This shall they have for their pride, because they have reproached and magnified themselves against the people of the LORD of hosts. The LORD will be terrible unto them: for he will famish all the gods of the earth; and men shall worship him, every one from his place, even all the isles of the heathen. Matthew 18:6. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. 1 Corinthians 6:8. Nay, you do wrong, and defraud, and that your brethren. Revelation 17:6. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

[956] 1 Corinthians 8:11-12. And through your knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died? But when you sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, you sin against Christ. Romans 14:13, 15, 21. Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumblingblock or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.... But if your brother be grieved with your meat, now walkest you not charitably. Destroy not him with your meat, for whom Christ died.... It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby your brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

[957] Ezekiel 13:19. And will you pollute me among my people for handfuls of barley and for pieces of bread, to slay the souls that should not die, and to save the souls alive that should not live, by your lying to my people that hear your lies? 1 Corinthians 8:12. But when you sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, you sin against Christ. Revelation 18:12-13. The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all yourine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble, And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. Matthew 23:15. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, you make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.

[958] 1 Thessalonians 2:15-16. Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men: Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost. Joshua 22:20. Did not Achan the son of Zerah commit a trespass in the accursed thing, and wrath fell on all the congregation of Israel? and that man perished not alone in his iniquity.

[959] Proverbs 6:30-33. Men do not despise a thief, if he steal to satisfy his soul when he is hungry; But if he be found, he shall restore sevenfold; he shall give all the substance of his house. But whoso committeth adultery with a woman lacketh understanding: he that doeth it destroyeth his own soul. A wound and dishonor shall he get; and his reproach shall not be wiped away.

[960] Ezra 9:10-12. And now, O our God, what shall we say after this? for we have forsaken your commandments, Which you have commanded by your servants the prophets, saying, The land, unto which you go to possess it, is an unclean land with the filthiness of the people of the lands, with their abominations, which have filled it from one end to another with their uncleanness. Now therefore give not your daughters unto their sons, neither take their daughters unto your sons, nor seek their peace or their wealth for ever: that you may be strong, and eat the good of the land, and leave it for an inheritance to your children for ever. 1 Kings 11:9-10. And the LORD was

angry with Solomon, because his heart was turned from the LORD God of Israel, which had appeared unto him twice, And had commanded him concerning this thing, that he should not go after other gods: but he kept not that which the LORD commanded.

[961] Colossians 3:5. Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry. 1 Timothy 6:10. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. Proverbs 5:8-12. Remove your way far from her, and come not nigh the door of her house: Lest you give your honor unto others, and your years unto the cruel: Lest strangers be filled with your wealth; and your labors be in the house of a stranger; And you mourn at the last, when your flesh and your body are consumed, And say, How have I hated instruction, and my heart despised reproof. Proverbs 6:32-33. But whoso committeth adultery with a woman lacketh understanding: he that doeth it destroyeth his own soul. A wound and dishonor shall he get; and his reproach shall not be wiped away. Joshua 7:21. When I saw among the spoils a goodly Babylonish garment, and two hundred shekels of silver, and a wedge of gold of fifty shekels weight, then I coveted them, and took them; and, behold, they are hid in the earth in the midst of my tent, and the silver under it.

[962] James 1:14-15. But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. Then when lust has conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death. Matthew 5:22. But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. Micah 2:1. Woe to them that devise iniquity, and work evil upon their beds! when the morning is light, they practice it, because it is in the power of their hand.

[963] Matthew 18:7. Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh! Romans 2:23-24. You that makes your boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonorest you God? For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.

[964] Deuteronomy 22:22, 28-29. If a man be found lying with a woman married to an husband, then they shall both of them die, both the man that lay with the woman, and the woman: so shall you put away evil from Israel.... If a man find a damsel that is a virgin, which is not betrothed, and lay hold on her, and lie with her, and they be found; Then the man that lay with her shall give unto the damsel's father fifty shekels of silver, and she shall be his wife; because he has humbled her, he may not put her away all his days. Proverbs 6:32-35. But whoso committeth adultery with a woman lacketh understanding: he that doeth it destroyeth his own soul. A wound and dishonor shall he get; and his reproach shall not be wiped away. For jealousy is the rage of a man: therefore he will not spare in the day of vengeance. He will not regard any ransom; neither will he rest content, though you givest many gifts.

[965] Matthew 11:21-24. Woe unto you, Chorazin! woe unto you, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shall be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in you, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee. John 15:22. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin.

[966] Isaiah 1:3. The ox knoweth his owner, and the ass his master's crib: but Israel does not know, my people does not consider. Deuteronomy 32:6. Do you thus requite the LORD, O foolish people and unwise? is not he your father that has bought thee? has he not made you, and established thee?

[967] Amos 4:8-11. So two or three cities wandered unto one city, to drink water; but they were not satisfied: yet have you not returned unto me, says the LORD. I have smitten you with blasting and mildew: when your gardens and your vineyards and your fig trees and your olive trees increased, the palmerworm devoured them: yet have you not returned unto me, says the LORD. I have sent among you the pestilence after the manner of Egypt: your young men have I slain with the sword, and have taken away your horses; and I have made the stink of your camps to come up unto your nostrils: yet have you not returned unto me, says the LORD. I have overthrown some of you, as God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah, and you were as a firebrand plucked out of the burning: yet have you not returned unto me, says the LORD. Jeremiah 5:3. O LORD, are not your eyes upon the truth? you have stricken them, but they have not grieved; you have consumed them, but they have refused to receive correction: they have made their faces harder than a rock; they have refused to return.

[968] Romans 1:26-27. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.

[969] Romans 1:32. Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them. Daniel 5:22. And you his son, O Belshazzar, have not humbled your heart, though you knewest all this. Titus 3:10-11. A man that is an heretic after the first and second admonition reject; Knowing that he that is such is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

[970] Proverbs 29:1. He, that being often reproved hardeneth his neck, shall suddenly be destroyed, and that without remedy.

[971] Titus 3:10. A man that is an heretic after the first and second admonition reject. Matthew 18:17. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto you as a heathen man and a publican.

[972] Proverbs 27:22. Though you shouldest bray a fool in a mortar among wheat with a pestle, yet will not his foolishness depart from him. Proverbs 23:35. They have stricken me, shall you say, and I was not sick; they have beaten me, and I felt it not: when shall I awake? I will seek it yet again.

[973] Psalm 78:34-37. When he slew them, then they sought him: and they returned and inquired early after God. And they remembered that God was their rock, and the high God their redeemer. Nevertheless they did flatter him with their mouth, and they lied unto him with their tongues. For their heart was not right with him, neither were they stedfast in his covenant. Jeremiah 2:20. For old time I have broken your yoke, and burst your bands; and you saidst, I will not transgress; when upon every high hill and under every green tree you wanderest, playing the harlot. Jeremiah 13:5-6, 20-21. So I went, and hid it by Euphrates, as the LORD commanded me. And it came to pass after many days, that the LORD said unto me, Arise, go to Euphrates, and take the girdle from thence, which I commanded you to hide there.... Lift up your eyes, and behold them that come from the north: where is the flock that was given you, your beautiful flock? What will you say when he shall punish thee? for you have taught them to be captains, and as chief over thee: shall not sorrows take you, as a woman in travail?

[974] Ecclesiastes 5:4-6. When you vowest a vow unto God, defer not to pay it; for he has no pleasure in fools: pay that which you have vowed. Better is it that you shouldest not vow, than that you shouldest vow and not pay. Suffer not your mouth to cause your flesh to sin; neither say you before the angel, that it was an error: wherefore should God be angry at your voice, and

destroy the work of your hands? Proverbs 20:25. It is a snare to the man who devoureth that which is holy, and after vows to make inquiry.

[975] Leviticus 26:25. And I will bring a sword upon you, that shall avenge the quarrel of my covenant: and when ye are gathered together within your cities, I will send the pestilence among you; and you shall be delivered into the hand of the enemy.

[976] Proverbs 2:17. Which forsaketh the guide of her youth, and forgetteth the covenant of her God. Ezekiel 7:18- 19. They shall also gird themselves with sackcloth, and horror shall cover them; and shame shall be upon all faces, and baldness upon all their heads. They shall cast their silver in the streets, and their gold shall be removed: their silver and their gold shall not be able to deliver them in the day of the wrath of the LORD: they shall not satisfy their souls, neither fill their bowels: because it is the stumblingblock of their iniquity.

[977] Psalm 36:4. He deviseth mischief upon his bed; he setteth himself in a way that is not good; he abhorreth not evil.

[978] Jeremiah 6:16. Thus says the LORD, Stand you in the ways, and see, and ask for the old paths, where is the good way, and walk in it, and you shall find rest for your souls. But they said, We will not walk in it.

[979] Numbers 15:30. But the soul that doeth ought presumptuously, whether he be born in the land, or a stranger, the same reproacheth the LORD; and that soul shall be cut off from among his people. Exodus 21:14. But if a man come presumptuously upon his neighbor, to slay him with guile; you shall take him from my altar, that he may die.

[980] Jeremiah 3:3. Therefore the showers have been withholden, and there has been no latter rain; and you hadst a whore's forehead, you refusedst to be ashamed. Proverbs 7:13. So she caught him, and kissed him, and with an impudent face said unto him....

[981] Psalm 52:1. Why boastest you yourself in mischief, O mighty man? the goodness of God endureth continually.

[982] 3 John 10. Wherefore, if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against us with malicious words, etc.

[983] Numbers 14:22. Because all those men which have seen my glory, and my miracles, which I did in Egypt and in the wilderness, and have tempted me now these ten times, and have not hearkened to my voice.

[984] Zechariah 7:11-12. But they refused to hearken, and pulled away the shoulder, and stopped their ears, that they should not hear. Yea, they made their hearts as an adamant stone, lest they should hear the law, and the words which the LORD of hosts has sent in his spirit by the former prophets: therefore came a great wrath from the LORD of hosts.

[985] Proverbs 2:14. Who rejoice to do evil, and delight in the frowardness of the wicked. [986] Isaiah 57:17. For the iniquity of his covetousness was I wroth, and smote him: I hid me, and was wroth, and he went on frowardly in the way of his heart.

[987] Jeremiah 34:8-11. This is the word that came unto Jeremiah from the LORD, after that the king Zedekiah had made a covenant with all the people which were at Jerusalem, to proclaim liberty unto them; That every man should let his manservant, and every man his maidservant, being an Hebrew or an Hebrewess, go free; that none should serve himself of them, to wit, of a Jew his brother. Now when all the princes, and all the people, which had entered into the covenant, heard that every one should let his manservant, and every one his maidservant, go free, that none should serve themselves of them any more, then they obeyed, and let them go.

But afterward they turned, and caused the servants and the handmaids, whom they had let go free, to return, and brought them into subjection for servants and for handmaids. 2 Peter 2:20-22. For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in it, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

[988] 2 Kings 5:26. And he said unto him, Went not my heart with you, when the man turned again from his chariot to meet thee? Is it a time to receive money, and to receive garments, and oliveyards, and vineyards, and sheep, and oxen, and menservants, and maidservants?

[989] Jeremiah 7:10. And come and stand before me in this house, which is called by my name, and say, We are delivered to do all these abominations? Isaiah 26:10. Let favor be showed to the wicked, yet will he not learn righteousness: in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly, and will not behold the majesty of the LORD.

[990] Ezekiel 23:37-39. That they have committed adultery, and blood is in their hands, and with their idols have they committed adultery, and have also caused their sons, whom they bare unto me, to pass for them through the fire, to devour them. Moreover this they have done unto me: they have defiled my sanctuary in the same day, and have profaned my sabbaths. For when they had slain their children to their idols, then they came the same day into my sanctuary to profane it; and, lo, thus have they done in the midst of my house.

[991] Isaiah 58:3-5. Wherefore have we fasted, say they, and you seest not? wherefore have we afflicted our soul, and you takest no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast you find pleasure, and exact all your labors. Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: you shall not fast as you do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? will you call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the LORD? Numbers 25:6-7. And, behold, one of the children of Israel came and brought unto his brethren a Midianitish woman in the sight of Moses, and in the sight of all the congregation of the children of Israel, who were weeping before the door of the tabernacle of the congregation. And when Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron the priest, saw it, he rose up from among the congregation, and took a javelin in his hand.

[992] 1 Corinthians 11:20-21. When you come together therefore into one place, this is not to eat the Lord's supper. For in eating every one taketh before other his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken. Jeremiah 7:8-10. Behold, you trust in lying words, that cannot profit. Will you steal, murder, and commit adultery, and swear falsely, and burn incense unto Baal, and walk after other gods whom you know not; And come and stand before me in this house, which is called by my name, and say, We are delivered to do all these abominations?

[993] Proverbs 7:14-15. I have peace offerings with me; this day have I payed my vows. Therefore came I forth to meet you, diligently to seek your face, and I have found thee. John 13:27, 30. And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That you doest, do quickly.... He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

[994] Ezra 9:13-14. And after all that is come upon us for our evil deeds, and for our great trespass, seeing that you our God have punished us less than our iniquities deserve, and have given us such deliverance as this; Should we again break your commandments, and join in affinity with the people of these abominations? wouldest not you be angry with us till you hadst consumed us, so that there should be no remnant nor escaping?

[995] 2 Samuel 16:22. So they spread Absalom a tent upon the top of the house; and Absalom went in unto his father's concubines in the sight of all Israel. 1 Samuel 2:22-24. Now Eli was very old, and heard all that his sons did unto all Israel; and how they lay with the women that assembled at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation. And he said unto them, Why do you such things? for I hear of your evil dealings by all this people. Nay, my sons; for it is no good report that I hear: you make the Lord's people to transgress.

Q. 152. What does every sin deserve at the hands of God?

A. Every sin, even the least, being against the sovereignty,[996] goodness,[997] and holiness of God,[998] and against his righteous law,[999] deserveth his wrath and curse,[1000] both in this life,[1001] and that which is to come;[1002] and cannot be expiated but by the blood of Christ.[1003]

[996] James 2:10-11. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if you commit no adultery, yet if you kill, you art become a transgressor of the law.

[997] Exodus 20:1-2. And God spoke all these words, saying, I am the LORD your God, which have brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.

[998] Habakkuk 1:13. You art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and can not look on iniquity: wherefore look you upon them that deal treacherously, and holdest your tongue when the wicked devoureth the man that is more righteous than he? Leviticus 10:3. Then Moses said unto Aaron, This is it that the LORD spoke, saying, I will be sanctified in them that come nigh me, and before all the people I will be glorified. And Aaron held his peace. Leviticus 11:44-45. For I am the LORD your God: you shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and you shall be holy; for I am holy: neither shall you defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. For I am the LORD that bringeth you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: you shall therefore be holy, for I am holy.

[999] 1 John 3:4. Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. Romans 7:12. Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

[1000] Ephesians 5:6. Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. Galatians 3:10. For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

[1001] Lamentations 3:39. Wherefore does a living man complain, a man for the punishment of his sins? Deuteronomy 28:15-18. But it shall come to pass, if you will not hearken unto the voice of the LORD your God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command you this day; that all these curses shall come upon you, and overtake thee: Cursed shall you be in the city, and cursed shall you be in the field. Cursed shall be thy basket and your store, etc.

[1002] Matthew 25:41. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.

[1003] Hebrews 9:22. And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission. 1 Peter 1:18-19. Forasmuch as you know that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

Q. 153. What does God require of us, that we may escape his wrath and curse due to us by reason of the transgression of the law?

A. That we may escape the wrath and curse of God due to us by reason of the transgression of the law, he requireth of us repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ,[1004] and the diligent use of the outward means whereby Christ communicates to us the benefits of his mediation.[1005]

[1004] Acts 20:21. Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ. Matthew 3:7-8. But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who has warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance. Luke 13:3, 5. I tell you, Nay: but, except you repent, you shall all likewise perish. Acts 16:30-31. And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you shall be saved, and your house. John 3:16, 18. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.... He that believes on him is not condemned: but he that believes not is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

[1005] Proverbs 2:1-5. My son, if you will receive my words, and hide my commandments with thee; So that you incline your ear unto wisdom, and apply your heart to understanding; Yea, if you criest after knowledge, and liftest up your voice for understanding; If you seekest her as silver, and searchest for her as for hid treasures; Then shall you understand the fear of the LORD, and find the knowledge of God. Proverbs 8:33-36. Hear instruction, and be wise, and refuse it not. Blessed is the man that heareth me, watching daily at my gates, waiting at the posts of my doors. For whoso findeth me findeth life, and shall obtain favor of the LORD. But he that sinneth against me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me love death.

Q. 154. What are the outward means whereby Christ communicates to us the benefits of his mediation?

A. The outward and ordinary means whereby Christ communicates to his church the benefits of his mediation, are all his ordinances; especially the Word, sacraments, and prayer; all which are made effectual to the elect for their salvation.[1006]

[1006] Matthew 28:19-20. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen. Acts 2:42, 46-47. And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.... And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, Praising God, and having favor with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

Q. 155. How is the Word made effectual to salvation?

A. The Spirit of God makes the reading, but especially the preaching of the Word, an effectual means of enlightening,[1007] convincing, and humbling sinners;[1008] of driving them out of themselves, and drawing them unto Christ;[1009] of conforming them to his image,[1010] and subduing them to his will;[1011] of strengthening them against temptations and corruptions;[1012] of building them up in grace,[1013] and establishing their hearts in holiness and comfort through faith unto salvation.[1014]

[1007] Nehemiah 8:8. So they read in the book in the law of God distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to understand the reading. Acts 26:18. To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness

of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me. Psalm 19:8. The statutes of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes.

[1008] 1 Corinthians 14:24-25. But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believes not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all: And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest; and so falling down on his face he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth. See 2 Chronicles 34:18-19, 26-28.

[1009] Acts 2:37, 41. Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?... Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. See Acts 8:27-38.

[1010] 2 Corinthians 3:18. But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord. See Colossians 1:27.

[1011] 2 Corinthians 10:4-6. (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled. See Romans 6:17-18.

[1012] Ephesians 6:16-17. Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith you shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. Colossians 1:28. Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus. Psalm 19:11. Moreover by them is your servant warned: and in keeping of them there is great reward. See Matthew 4:4, 7, 10; 1 Corinthians 10:11.

[1013] Ephesians 4:11-12. And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ. Acts 20:32. And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified. See 2 Timothy 3:15-17.

[1014] Romans 16:25. Now to him that is of power to establish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began. 1 Thessalonians 3:2, 10-11, 13. And sent Timotheus, our brother, and minister of God, and our fellowlaborer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith.... Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith? Now God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way unto you.... To the end he may establish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints. See Romans 15:4; 10:13-17; 1:16.

Q. 156. Is the Word of God to be read by all?

A. Although all are not to be permitted to read the Word publicly to the congregation,[1015] yet all sorts of people are bound to read it apart by themselves,[1016] and with their families:[1017] to which end, the holy scriptures are to be translated out of the original into vulgar languages.[1018]

[1015] Deuteronomy 31:9, 11-13. And Moses wrote this law, and delivered it unto the priests the sons of Levi, which bare the ark of the covenant of the LORD, and unto all the elders of Israel.... When all Israel is come to appear before the LORD your God in the place which he shall choose,

you shall read this law before all Israel in their hearing. Gather the people together, men, and women, and children, and your stranger that is within your gates, that they may hear, and that they may learn, and fear the LORD your God, and observe to do all the words of this law: And that their children, which have not known any thing, may hear, and learn to fear the LORD your God, as long as you live in the land whither you go over Jordan to possess it. See Nehemiah 8:2-3; 9:3-5.

[1016] Deuteronomy 17:19. And it shall be with him, and he shall read in it all the days of his life: that he may learn to fear the LORD his God, to keep all the words of this law and these statutes, to do them. Revelation 1:3. Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written in it: for the time is at hand. John 5:39. Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. Isaiah 34:16. Seek you out of the book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail, etc.

[1017] Deuteronomy 6:6-9. And these words, which I command you this day, shall be in your heart: And you shall teach them diligently unto your children, and shall talk of them when you sittest in your house, and when you walkest by the way, and when you liest down, and when you risest up. And you shall bind them for a sign upon your hand, and they shall be as frontlets between your eyes. And you shall write them upon the posts of your house, and on your gates. Genesis 18:17. And the LORD said, Shall I hide from Abraham that thing which I do?... For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the LORD, to do justice and judgment; that the LORD may bring upon Abraham that which he has spoken of him. Psalm 78:5-7. For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: That the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born; who should arise and declare them to their children: That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep his commandments.

[1018] 1 Corinthians 14:6, 9, 11-12, 15-16, 24, 27-28. Now, brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?... So likewise ye, except you utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for you shall speak into the air.... Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh a barbarian, and he that speaketh shall be a barbarian unto me. Even so ye, forasmuch as you are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that you may excel to the edifying of the church.... What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also. Else when you shall bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say Amen at your giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what you sayest?... But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believes not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all.... If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course; and let one interpret. But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church; and let him speak to himself, and to God. Nehemiah 8:8. So they read in the book in the law of God distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to understand the reading.

Q. 157. How is the Word of God to be read?

A. The holy Scriptures are to be read with an high and reverent esteem of them;[1019] with a firm persuasion that they are the very Word of God,[1020] and that he only can enable us to understand them;[1021] with desire to know, believe, and obey the will of God revealed in them;[1022] with diligence,[1023] and attention to the matter and scope of them;[1024] with meditation,[1025] application,[1026] self-denial,[1027] and prayer.[1028]

[1019] Psalm 119:97. O how love I your law! it is my meditation all the day. Psalm 19:10. More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold: sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb. Exodus 24:7. And he took the book of the covenant, and read in the audience of the

people: and they said, All that the LORD has said will we do, and be obedient. 2 Chronicles 34:27. Because your heart was tender, and you didst humble yourself before God, when you hearest his words against this place, and against the inhabitants of it, and humbledst yourself before me, and didst rend your clothes, and weep before me; I have even heard you also, says the LORD. Isaiah 66:2. For all those things has my hand made, and all those things have been, says the LORD: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word. See Nehemiah 8:3-10.

[1020] 2 Peter 1:19-21. We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto you do well that you take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. Matthew 4:4. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God. 1 Thessalonians 2:13. For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when you received the word of God which you heard of us, you received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe. See Mark 7:13.

[1021] Luke 24:45. Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures. 2 Corinthians 3:13-16. And not as Moses, which put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which veil is done away in Christ. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away.

[1022] Deuteronomy 17:10, 20. And you shall do according to the sentence, which they of that place which the LORD shall choose shall show thee; and you shall observe to do according to all that they inform thee.... That his heart be not lifted up above his brethren, and that he turn not aside from the commandment, to the right hand, or to the left: to the end that he may prolong his days in his kingdom, he, and his children, in the midst of Israel.

[1023] Acts 17:11. These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

[1024] Acts 8:30, 34. And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest you what you readest?... And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray you, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man? Luke 10:26-28. He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answering said, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all thy strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as yourself. And he said unto him, You have answered right: this do, and you shall live.

[1025] Psalm 1:2. But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law does he meditate day and night. Psalm 119:97. O how love I your law! it is my meditation all the day. [1026] 2 Chronicles 34:21. Go, inquire of the LORD for me, and for them that are left in Israel and in Judah, concerning the words of the book that is found: for great is the wrath of the LORD that is poured out upon us, because our fathers have not kept the word of the LORD, to do after all that is written in this book.

[1027] Proverbs 3:5. Trust in the LORD with all your heart; and lean not unto your own understanding. Deuteronomy 33:3. Yea, he loved the people; all his saints are in your hand: and they sat down at your feet; every one shall receive of your words. Matthew 16:24. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. See Luke 9:23; Galatians 1:15-16.

[1028] Proverbs 2:1-6. My son, if you will receive my words, and hide my commandments with thee; So that you incline your ear unto wisdom, and apply your heart to understanding; Yea, if you criest after knowledge, and liftest up your voice for understanding; If you seekest her as silver, and searchest for her as for hid treasures; Then shall you understand the fear of the LORD, and find the knowledge of God. For the LORD giveth wisdom: out of his mouth cometh knowledge and understanding. Psalm 119:18. Open you my eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of your law. Nehemiah 8:6, 8. And Ezra blessed the LORD, the great God. And all the people answered, Amen, Amen, with lifting up their hands: and they bowed their heads, and worshipped the LORD with their faces to the ground.... So they read in the book in the law of God distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to understand the reading.

Q. 158. By whom is the Word of God to be preached?

A. The Word of God is to be preached only by such as are sufficiently gifted,[1029] and also duly approved and called to that office.[1030]

[1029] 1 Timothy 3:2, 6. A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach.... Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil. Ephesians 4:8-11. Wherefore he says, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.) And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers. Malachi 2:7. For the priest's lips should keep knowledge, and they should seek the law at his mouth: for he is the messenger of the LORD of hosts. 2 Corinthians 3:6. Who also has made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life. 2 Timothy 2:2. And the things that you have heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit you to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

[1030] Jeremiah 14:15. Therefore thus says the LORD concerning the prophets that prophesy in my name, and I sent them not, yet they say, Sword and famine shall not be in this land; By sword and famine shall those prophets be consumed. Romans 10:15. And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! Hebrews 5:4. And no man taketh this honor unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron. 1 Corinthians 12:28-29. And God has set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? 1 Timothy 3:10. And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless. 1 Timothy 4:14. Neglect not the gift that is in you, which was given you by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery. 1 Timothy 5:22. Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep yourself pure.

Q. 159. How is the Word of God to be preached by those that are called thereunto?

A. They that are called to labor in the ministry of the Word, are to preach sound doctrine,[1031] diligently,[1032] in season and out of season;[1033] plainly,[1034] not in the enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power;[1035] faithfully,[1036] making known the whole counsel of God;[1037] wisely,[1038] applying themselves to the necessities and capacities of the hearers;[1039] zealously,[1040] with fervent love to God[1041] and the souls of his people;[1042] sincerely,[1043] aiming at his glory,[1044] and their conversion,[1045] edification,[1046] and salvation.[1047]

[1031] Titus 2:1, 8. But speak you the things which become sound doctrine.... Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

[1032] Acts 18:25. This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in the spirit, he spoke and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John.

[1033] 2 Timothy 4:2. Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.

[1034] 1 Corinthians 14:9. So likewise ye, except you utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for you shall speak into the air (see verses 10-19).

[1035] 1 Corinthians 2:4. And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power.

[1036] Jeremiah 23:28. The prophet that has a dream, let him tell a dream; and he that has my word, let him speak my word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat? says the LORD. 1 Corinthians 4:1-2. Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.

[1037] Acts 20:27. For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

[1038] Colossians 1:28. Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus. 2 Timothy 2:15. Study to show yourself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

[1039] 1 Corinthians 3:2. I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto you were not able to bear it, neither yet now are you able. Hebrews 5:12-14. For when for the time you ought to be teachers, you have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil. Luke 12:42. And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

[1040] Acts 18:25. This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in the spirit, he spoke and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John. Psalm 119:139. My zeal has consumed me, because my enemies have forgotten your words. 2 Timothy 4:5. But watch you in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of your ministry.

[1041] 2 Corinthians 5:13-14. For whether we be beside ourselves, it is to God: or whether we be sober, it is for your cause. For the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead. Philippians 1:15-17. Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife; and some also of good will: The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds: But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel.

[1042] Colossians 4:12. Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always laboring fervently for you in prayers, that you may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God. 2 Corinthians 12:15. And I will very gladly spend and be spent for you; though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved.

[1043] 2 Corinthians 2:17. For we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ. 2 Corinthians 4:2. But have

renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commanding ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.

[1044] 1 Thessalonians 2:4-6. But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak; not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts. For neither at any time used we flattering words, as you know, nor a cloak of covetousness; God is witness: Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ. John 7:18. He that speaketh of himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.

[1045] 1 Corinthians 9:19-22. For though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself servant unto all, that I might gain the more. And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law; To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law. To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.

[1046] 2 Corinthians 12:19. Again, think you that we excuse ourselves unto you? we speak before God in Christ: but we do all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying. Ephesians 4:12. For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ.

[1047] 1 Timothy 4:16. Take heed unto yourself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this you shall both save yourself, and them that hear thee. Acts 26:16-18. But rise, and stand upon your feet: for I have appeared unto you for this purpose, to make you a minister and a witness both of these things which you have seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; Delivering you from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send you, To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

Q. 160. What is required of those that hear the Word preached?

A. It is required of those that hear the Word preached, that they attend upon it with diligence,[1048] preparation,[1049] and prayer;[1050] examine what they hear by the Scriptures;[1051] receive the truth with faith,[1052] love,[1053] meekness,[1054] and readiness of mind,[1055] as the Word of God;[1056] meditate,[1057] and confer of it;[1058] hide it in their hearts,[1059] and bring forth the fruit of it in their lives[1060]. [1048] Proverbs 8:34. Blessed is the man that heareth me, watching daily at my gates, waiting at the posts of my doors.

[1049] 1 Peter 2:1-2. Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings, As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that you may grow thereby. Luke 8:18. Take heed therefore how you hear: for whosoever has, to him shall be given; and whosoever has not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.

[1050] Psalm 119:18. Open you my eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of your law. Ephesians 6:18-19. Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel.

[1051] Acts 17:11. These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

[1052] Hebrews 4:2. For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

[1053] 2 Thessalonians 2:10. And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

[1054] James 1:21. Wherefore lay apart all filious and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

[1055] Acts 17:11. These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

[1056] 1 Thessalonians 2:13. For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when you received the word of God which you heard of us, you received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

[1057] Luke 9:44. Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men. Hebrews 2:1. Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip.

[1058] Luke 24:14. And they talked together of all these things which had happened. Deuteronomy 6:6-7. And these words, which I command you this day, shall be in your heart: And you shall teach them diligently unto your children, and shall talk of them when you sittest in your house, and when you walkest by the way, and when you liest down, and when you risest up.

[1059] Proverbs 2:1. My son, if you will receive my words, and hide my commandments with thee. Psalm 119:11. Thy word have I hid in my heart, that I might not sin against thee.

[1060] Luke 8:15. But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience. James 1:25. But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth in it, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

Q. 161. How do the sacraments become effectual means of salvation?

A. The sacraments become effectual means of salvation, not by any power in themselves, or any virtue derived from the piety or intention of him by whom they are administered, but only by the working of the Holy Ghost, and the blessing of Christ, by whom they are instituted[1061].

[1061] 1 Peter 3:21. The like figure whereunto even baptism does also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Acts 8:13, 23. Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.... For I perceive that you art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity. 1 Corinthians 3:5-7. Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom you believed, even as the Lord gave to every man? I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase. Compared with 1 Corinthians 1:12- 17. Now this I say, that every one of you says, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were you baptized in the name of Paul? I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; Lest any should say that I had baptized in my own name. And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other. For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect. 1 Corinthians 12:13. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. 1 Corinthians 6:11. And such were some of you: but you are washed, but you are sanctified, but you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

Q. 162. What is a sacrament?

A. A sacrament is an holy ordinance instituted by Christ in his church,[1062] to signify, seal, and exhibit[1063] unto those that are within the covenant of grace,[1064] the benefits of his mediation;[1065] to strengthen and increase their faith, and all other graces;[1066] to oblige them to obedience;[1067] to testify and cherish their love and communion one with another;[1068] and to distinguish them from those that are without.[1069]

[1062] Genesis 17:7, 10. And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto you, and to your seed after thee.... This is my covenant, which you shall keep, between me and you and your seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised. Exodus 12 (containing the institution of the passover). Matthew 28:19. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Matthew 26:26-28. And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink you all of it; For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. See Mark 14:22-25; Luke 22:19-20; 1 Corinthians 11:22-26.

[1063] Romans 4:11. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also. 1 Corinthians 11:24-25. And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me.

[1064] Romans 15:8. Now I say that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers. Exodus 12:48. And when a stranger shall sojourn with you, and will keep the passover to the LORD, let all his males be circumcised, and then let him come near and keep it; and he shall be as one that is born in the land: for no uncircumcised person shall eat of it. Romans 9:8. That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed. Galatians 3:27, 29. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.... And if you be Christ's, then are you Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

[1065] Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. 1 Corinthians 10:16. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

[1066] Romans 4:11. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also. Galatians 3:27. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

[1067] Romans 6:3-4. Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 1 Corinthians 10:21. you cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: you cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

[1068] Ephesians 4:2-5. With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. There is one body, and one Spirit, even as you are called in one hope of your calling; One Lord, one faith, one baptism. 1 Corinthians 12:13. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be

Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. 1 Corinthians 10:16-17. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

[1069] Ephesians 2:11-12. Wherefore remember, that you being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; That at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world. Genesis 34:14. And they said unto them, We cannot do this thing, to give our sister to one that is uncircumcised; for that were a reproach unto us.

Q. 163. What are the parts of a sacrament?

A. The parts of the sacrament are two; the one an outward and sensible sign, used according to Christ's own appointment; the other an inward and spiritual grace thereby signified.[1070]

[1070] Matthew 3:11. I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire. 1 Peter 3:21. The like figure whereunto even baptism does also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost. Compare Confession of Faith 27.2 and the passages cited thereunder. Compare also Deuteronomy 10:16; 30:6; Jeremiah 4:4.

Q. 164. How many sacraments has Christ instituted in his church under the New Testament?

A. Under the New Testament Christ has instituted in his church only two sacraments, baptism and the Lord's supper.[1071]

[1071] Matthew 28:19. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. 1 Corinthians 11:20, 23. When you come together therefore into one place, this is not to eat the Lord's supper.... For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread. Matthew 26:26-28. And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink you all of it; For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

133 Q. 165. What is baptism?

A. Baptism is a sacrament of the New Testament, in which Christ has ordained the washing with water in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost,[1072] to be a sign and seal of ingrafting into himself,[1073] of remission of sins by his blood,[1074] and regeneration by his Spirit;[1075] of adoption,[1076] and resurrection unto everlasting life;[1077] and whereby the parties baptized are solemnly admitted into the visible church,[1078] and enter into an open and professed engagement to be wholly and only the Lord's.[1079]

[1072] Matthew 28:19. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.

[1073] Galatians 3:27. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. Romans 6:3. Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?

[1074] Mark 1:4. John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. Revelation 1:5. And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood. Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. Acts 22:16. And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord. 1 Peter 3:21. The like figure whereunto even baptism does also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

[1075] Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost. Ephesians 5:26. That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word. See Acts 2:38.

[1076] Galatians 3:26-27. For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

[1077] 1 Corinthians 15:29. Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead? Romans 6:5. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection.

[1078] 1 Corinthians 12:13. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. Acts 2:41. Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.

[1079] Romans 6:4. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. See Acts 2:38-42.

Q. 166. Unto whom is baptism to be administered?

A. Baptism is not to be administered to any that are out of the visible church, and so strangers from the covenant of promise, till they profess their faith in Christ, and obedience to him,[1080] but infants descending from parents, either both, or but one of them, professing faith in Christ, and obedience to him, are in that respect within the covenant, and to be baptized.[1081]

[1080] Acts 2:38-39, 41. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the LORD our God shall call.... Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. Acts 13:4 8:12, 36, 38. But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.... And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; what does hinder me to be baptized?... And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him. Acts 16:15. And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought us, saying, If you have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained us.

[1081] Colossians 2:11-12. In whom also you are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: Buried with him in baptism, in which also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him from the dead. Acts 2:38-39. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar

off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call. Romans 4:11-12. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also: And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised. 1 Corinthians 7:14. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy. Luke 18:15-16. And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them. But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. See Genesis 17:7-9; Galatians 3:9-14; Romans 11:16.

Q. 167. How is our baptism to be improved by us?

A. The needful but much neglected duty of improving our baptism, is to be performed by us all our life long, especially in the time of temptation, and when we are present at the administration of it to others;[1082] by serious and thankful consideration of the nature of it, and of the ends for which Christ instituted it, the privileges and benefits conferred and sealed thereby, and our solemn vow made in it;[1083] by being humbled for our sinful defilement, our falling short of, and walking contrary to, the grace of baptism, and our engagements;[1084] by growing up to assurance of pardon of sin, and of all other blessings sealed to us in that sacrament;[1085] by drawing strength from the death and resurrection of Christ, into whom we are baptized, for the mortifying of sin, and quickening of grace;[1086] and by endeavoring to live by faith,[1087] to have our conversation in holiness and righteousness,[1088] as those that have in it given up their names to Christ;[1089] and to walk in brotherly love, as being baptized by the same Spirit into one body.[1090]

[1082] Colossians 2:11-12. In whom also you are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: Buried with him in baptism, in which also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him from the dead. Romans 6:4, 6, 11. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.... Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.... Likewise reckon you also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

[1083] Romans 6:3-5. Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection. 1 Peter 3:21. The like figure whereunto even baptism does also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

[1084] 1 Corinthians 1:11-13. For it has been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. Now this I say, that every one of you says, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were you baptized in the name of Paul? Romans 6:2-3. God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer in it? Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?

[1085] Romans 6:4-7, 22. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. For he that is dead is

freed from sin.... But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, you have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. 1 Peter 3:21. The like figure whereunto even baptism does also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Romans 5:1-2. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: By whom also we have access by faith into this grace in which we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. Jeremiah 33:8. And I will cleanse them from all their iniquity, whereby they have sinned against me; and I will pardon all their iniquities, whereby they have sinned, and whereby they have transgressed against me.

[1086] Romans 6:3-5. Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection.

[1087] Galatians 3:26-27. For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

[1088] Romans 6:22. But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, you have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

[1089] Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. Compared with Galatians 2:20. I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. See also Revelation 2:17.

[1090] 1 Corinthians 12:13, 25. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.... That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another.

Q. 168. What is the Lord's supper?

A. The Lord's supper is a sacrament of the New Testament,[1091] in which, by giving and receiving bread and wine according to the appointment of Jesus Christ, his death is showed forth; and they that worthily communicate feed upon his body and blood, to their spiritual nourishment and growth in grace;[1092] have their union and communion with him confirmed;[1093] testify and renew their thankfulness,[1094] and engagement to God,[1095] and their mutual love and fellowship each with the other, as members of the same mystical body.[1096]

[1091] Luke 22:20. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

[1092] Matthew 26:26-28. And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink you all of it; For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. 1 Corinthians 11:23-26. For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me. For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come.

[1093] 1 Corinthians 10:16. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

[1094] 1 Corinthians 11:24. And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.

[1095] 1 Corinthians 10:14-16, 21. Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry. I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?... you cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: you cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils. Compared with Romans 7:4. Wherefore, my brethren, you also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that you should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

[1096] 1 Corinthians 10:17. For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

Q. 169. How has Christ appointed bread and wine to be given and received in the sacrament of the Lord's supper?

A. Christ has appointed the ministers of his Word, in the administration of this sacrament of the Lord's supper, to set apart the bread and wine from common use, by the word of institution, thanksgiving, and prayer; to take and break the bread, and to give both the bread and the wine to the communicants: who are, by the same appointment, to take and eat the bread, and to drink the wine, in thankful remembrance that the body of Christ was broken and given, and his blood shed, for them.[1097]

[1097] 1 Corinthians 11:23-24. For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. See Matthew 26:26-28; Mark 14:22-24; Luke 22:19-20.

Q. 170. How do they that worthily communicate in the Lord's supper feed upon the body and blood of Christ in it?

A. As the body and blood of Christ are not corporally or carnally present in, with, or under the bread and wine in the Lord's supper,[1098] and yet are spiritually present to the faith of the receiver, no less truly and really than the elements themselves are to their outward senses;[1099] so they that worthily communicate in the sacrament of the Lord's supper, do in it feed upon the body and blood of Christ, not after a corporal and carnal, but in a spiritual manner; yet truly and really,[1100] while by faith they receive and apply unto themselves Christ crucified, and all the benefits of his death.[1101]

[1098] Acts 3:21. Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.

[1099] Matthew 26:26, 28. And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.... For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

[1100] 1 Corinthians 11:24-29. And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me. For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come. Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. Compare with Confession of Faith 27.2. Compare also John 6:51, 53.

[1101] 1 Corinthians 10:16. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

Q. 171. How are they that receive the sacrament of the Lord's supper to prepare themselves before they come unto it?

A. They that receive the sacrament of the Lord's supper are, before they come, to prepare themselves thereunto, by examining themselves[1102] of their being in Christ,[1103] of their sins and wants;[1104] of the truth and measure of their knowledge,[1105] faith,[1106] repentance;[1107] love to God and the brethren,[1108] charity to all men,[1109] forgiving those that have done them wrong;[1110] of their desires after Christ,[1111] and of their new obedience;[1112] and by renewing the exercise of these graces,[1113] by serious meditation,[1114] and fervent prayer.[1115]

[1102] 1 Corinthians 11:28. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

[1103] 2 Corinthians 13:5. Examine yourselves, whether you be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know you not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except you be reprobates?

[1104] 1 Corinthians 5:7. Purge out therefore the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, as you are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us. Exodus 12:15. Seven days shall you eat unleavened bread; even the first day you shall put away leaven out of your houses: for whosoever eateth leavened bread from the first day until the seventh day, that soul shall be cut off from Israel.

[1105] 1 Corinthians 11:29. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

[1106] 2 Corinthians 13:5. Examine yourselves, whether you be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know you not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except you be reprobates? Matthew 26:28. For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

[1107] Zechariah 12:10. And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn. 1 Corinthians 11:31. For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.

[1108] 1 Corinthians 10:16-17. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread. Acts 2:46-47. And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, Praising God, and having favor with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

[1109] 1 Corinthians 5:8. Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth. 1 Corinthians 11:18, 20. For first of all, when you come together in the church, I hear that there be

divisions among you; and I partly believe it.... When you come together therefore into one place, this is not to eat the Lord's supper.

[1110] Matthew 5:23-24. Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there rememberest that your brother has ought against thee; Leave there your gift before the altar, and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift.

[1111] Isaiah 55:1. Ho, every one that thirsteth, come you to the waters, and he that has no money; come ye, buy, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price. John 7:37. In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.

[1112] 1 Corinthians 5:7-8. Purge out therefore the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, as you are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

[1113] 1 Corinthians 11:25-26, 28. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me. For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come.... But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. Hebrews 10:21-22. And having an high priest over the house of God; Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. Hebrews 10:24. And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works. Psalm 26:6. I will wash my hands in innocence: so will I compass your altar, O LORD.

[1114] 1 Corinthians 11:24-25. And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me.

[1115] 2 Chronicles 30:18-19. For a multitude of the people, even many of Ephraim, and Manasseh, Issachar, and Zebulun, had not cleansed themselves, yet did they eat the passover otherwise than it was written. But Hezekiah prayed for them, saying, The good LORD pardon every one That prepareth his heart to seek God, the LORD God of his fathers, though he be not cleansed according to the purification of the sanctuary. Matthew 26:26. And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.

Q. 172. May one who doubteth of his being in Christ, or of his due preparation, come to the Lord's supper?

A. One who doubteth of his being in Christ, or of his due preparation to the sacrament of the Lord's supper, may have true interest in Christ, though he be not yet assured of it;[1116] and in God's account has it, if he be duly affected with the apprehension of the want of it,[1117] and unfeignedly desires to be found in Christ,[1118] and to depart from iniquity:[1119] in which case (because promises are made, and this sacrament is appointed, for the relief even of weak and doubting Christians[1120]) he is to bewail his unbelief,[1121] and labor to have his doubts resolved;[1122] and, so doing, he may and ought to come to the Lord's supper, that he may be further strengthened.[1123]

[1116] Isaiah 50:10. Who is among you that feareth the LORD, that obeyeth the voice of his servant, that walketh in darkness, and has no light? let him trust in the name of the LORD, and stay upon his God. 1 John 5:13. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may believe on the

name of the Son of God. Psalm 88. O LORD God of my salvation, I have cried day and night before thee: Let my prayer come before thee: incline your ear unto my cry; For my soul is full of troubles: and my life draweth nigh unto the grave. I am counted with them that go down into the pit: I am as a man that has no strength: Free among the dead, like the slain that lie in the grave, whom you rememberest no more: and they are cut off from your hand. You have laid me in the lowest pit, in darkness, in the deeps. your wrath lieth hard upon me, and you have afflicted me with all your waves. Selah. You have put away my acquaintance far from me; you have made me an abomination unto them: I am shut up, and I cannot come forth. My eye mourneth by reason of affliction: LORD, I have called daily upon you, I have stretched out my hands unto thee. Will you show wonders to the dead? shall the dead arise and praise thee? Selah. Shall your lovingkindness be declared in the grave? or your faithfulness in destruction? Shall your wonders be known in the dark? and your righteousness in the land of forgetfulness? But unto you have I cried, O LORD; and in the morning shall my prayer prevent thee. LORD, why castest you off my soul? why hidest you your face from me? I am afflicted and ready to die from my youth up: while I suffer your terrors I am distracted. your fierce wrath goeth over me; your terrors have cut me off. They came round about me daily like water; they compassed me about together. Lover and friend have you put far from me, and mine acquaintance into darkness. Psalm 77:1-4, 7-10. I cried unto God with my voice, even unto God with my voice; and he gave ear unto me. In the day of my trouble I sought the Lord: my sore ran in the night, and ceased not: my soul refused to be comforted. I remembered God, and was troubled: I complained, and my spirit was overwhelmed. Selah. You holdest my eyes waking: I am so troubled that I cannot speak.... Will the Lord cast off for ever? and will he be favorable no more? Is his mercy clean gone for ever? does his promise fail for evermore? Has God forgotten to be gracious? has he in anger shut up his tender mercies? Selah. And I said, This is my infirmity: but I will remember the years of the right hand of the most High. Jonah 2:4. Then I said, I am cast out of your sight; yet I will look again toward your holy temple.

[1117] Isaiah 54:7-10. For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. In a little wrath I hid my face from you for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on you, says the LORD your Redeemer. For this is as the waters of Noah unto me: for as I have sworn that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth; so have I sworn that I would not be wroth with you, nor rebuke thee. For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from you, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, says the LORD that has mercy on thee. Matthew 5:3-4. Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. Psalm 31:22. For I said in my havee, I am cut off from before your eyes: nevertheless you hearest the voice of my supplications when I cried unto thee. Psalm 73:13, 22-23. Verily I have cleansed my heart in vain, and washed my hands in innocence.... So foolish was I, and ignorant: I was as a beast before thee. Nevertheless I am continually with thee: you have holden me by my right hand.

[1118] Philippians 3:8-9. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, And be found in him, not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith. Psalm 10:17. LORD, you have heard the desire of the humble: you will prepare their heart, you will cause your ear to hear. Psalm 42:1-2, 5, 11. As the hart panteth after the water brooks, so panteth my soul after you, O God. My soul thirsteth for God, for the living God: when shall I come and appear before God?.... Why art you cast down, O my soul? and why art you disquieted in me? hope you in God: for I shall yet praise him for the help of his countenance.... Why art you cast down, O my soul? and why art you disquieted within me? hope you in God: for I shall yet praise him, who is the health of my countenance, and my God.

[1119] 2 Timothy 2:19. Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity. Isaiah 50:10. Who is among you that feareth the LORD, that obeyeth the voice of his

servant, that walketh in darkness, and has no light? let him trust in the name of the LORD, and stay upon his God. Psalm 66:18-20. If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me: But verily God has heard me; he has attended to the voice of my prayer. Blessed be God, which has not turned away my prayer, nor his mercy from me.

[1120] Isaiah 40:11, 29, 31. He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry them in his bosom, and shall gently lead those that are with young.... He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might he increaseth strength.... But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint. Matthew 11:28. Come unto me, all you that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Matthew 12:20. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. Matthew 26:28. For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

[1121] Mark 9:24. And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help you my unbelief.

[1122] Acts 2:37. Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? Acts 16:30. And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

[1123] Romans 4:11. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also. 1 Corinthians 11:28. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

Q. 173. May any who profess the faith, and desire to come to the Lord's supper, be kept from it?

A. Such as are found to be ignorant or scandalous, notwithstanding their profession of the faith, and desire to come to the Lord's supper, may and ought to be kept from that sacrament, by the power which Christ has left in his church,[1124] until they receive instruction, and manifest their reformation.[1125]

[1124] 1 Corinthians 11:27-34. Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep. For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged. But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world. Wherefore, my brethren, when you come together to eat, tarry one for another. And if any man hunger, let him eat at home; that you come not together unto condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come. Matthew 7:6. Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast you your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you. 1 Corinthians 5. It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. And you are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that has done this deed might be taken away from among you. For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that has so done this deed, In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. Your glorying is not good. Know you not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, as you are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth. I wrote unto you in

an epistle not to company with fornicators: Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must you needs go out of the world. But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat. For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not you judge them that are within? But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person. Jude 23. And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh. 1 Timothy 5:22. Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep yourself pure.

[1125] 2 Corinthians 2:7. So that contrariwise you ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

Q. 174. What is required of them that receive the sacrament of the Lord's supper in the time of the administration of it?

A. It is required of them that receive the sacrament of the Lord's supper, that, during the time of the administration of it, with all holy reverence and attention they wait upon God in that ordinance,[1126] diligently observe the sacramental elements and actions,[1127] heedfully discern the Lord's body,[1128] and affectionately meditate on his death and sufferings,[1129] and thereby stir up themselves to a vigorous exercise of their graces;[1130] in judging themselves,[1131] and sorrowing for sin;[1132] in earnest hungering and thirsting after Christ,[1133] feeding on him by faith,[1134] receiving of his fullness,[1135] trusting in his merits,[1136] rejoicing in his love,[1137] giving thanks for his grace;[1138] in renewing of their covenant with God,[1139] and love to all the saints.[1140]

[1126] Leviticus 10:3. Then Moses said unto Aaron, This is it that the LORD spoke, saying, I will be sanctified in them that come nigh me, and before all the people I will be glorified. And Aaron held his peace. Hebrews 12:28. Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear. Psalm 5:7. But as for me, I will come into your house in the multitude of thy mercy: and in your fear will I worship toward your holy temple. 1 Corinthians 11:17, 26-27. Now in this that I declare unto you I praise you not, that you come together not for the better, but for the worse.... For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come. Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

[1127] Exodus 24:8. And Moses took the blood, and sprinkled it on the people, and said, Behold the blood of the covenant, which the LORD has made with you concerning all these words. Matthew 26:28. For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

[1128] 1 Corinthians 11:29. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

[1129] Luke 22:19. And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.

[1130] 1 Corinthians 11:26. For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come. 1 Corinthians 10:3-5, 11, 14. And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness.... Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.... Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.

[1131] 1 Corinthians 11:31. For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.

[1132] Zechariah 12:10. And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.

[1133] Revelation 22:17. And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. See Matthew 5:6. [1134] John 6:35. And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believes on me shall never thirst. See verses 47-58.

[1135] John 1:16. And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.

[1136] Philippians 3:9. And be found in him, not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.

[1137] Psalm 63:4-5. Thus will I bless you while I live: I will lift up my hands in your name. My soul shall be satisfied as with marrow and fatness; and my mouth shall praise you with joyful lips. 2 Chronicles 30:21. And the children of Israel that were present at Jerusalem kept the feast of unleavened bread seven days with great gladness: and the Levites and the priests praised the LORD day by day, singing with loud instruments unto the LORD.

[1138] Psalm 22:26. The meek shall eat and be satisfied: they shall praise the LORD that seek him: your heart shall live for ever. See 1 Corinthians 10:16.

[1139] Jeremiah 50:5. They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, saying, Come, and let us join ourselves to the LORD in a perpetual covenant that shall not be forgotten. Psalm 50:5. Gather my saints together unto me; those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice.

[1140] Acts 2:42. And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

Q. 175. What is the duty of Christians, after they have received the sacrament of the Lord's supper?

A. The duty of Christians, after they have received the sacrament of the Lord's supper, is seriously to consider how they have behaved themselves in it, and with what success;[1141] if they find quickening and comfort, to bless God for it,[1142] beg the continuance of it,[1143] watch against relapses,[1144] fulfill their vows,[1145] and encourage themselves to a frequent attendance on that ordinance:[1146] but if they find no present benefit, more exactly to review their preparation to, and carriage at, the sacrament;[1147] in both which, if they can approve themselves to God and their own consciences, they are to wait for the fruit of it in due time:[1148] but, if they see they have failed in either, they are to be humbled,[1149] and to attend upon it afterwards with more care and diligence.[1150]

[1141] Psalm 28:7. The LORD is my strength and my shield; my heart trusted in him, and I am helped: therefore my heart greatly rejoices; and with my song will I praise him. Psalm 85:8. I will hear what God the LORD will speak: for he will speak peace unto his people, and to his saints: but let them not turn again to folly. 1 Corinthians 11:17, 30-31. Now in this that I declare unto you I praise you not, that you come together not for the better, but for the worse.... For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep. For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.

[1142] 2 Chronicles 30:21-23, 25-26. And the children of Israel that were present at Jerusalem kept the feast of unleavened bread seven days with great gladness: and the Levites and the priests praised the LORD day by day, singing with loud instruments unto the LORD. And Hezekiah spoke comfortably unto all the Levites that taught the good knowledge of the LORD: and they did eat throughout the feast seven days, offering peace offerings, and making confession to the LORD God of their fathers. And the whole assembly took counsel to keep other seven days: and they kept other seven days with gladness.... And all the congregation of Judah, with the priests and the Levites, and all the congregation that came out of Israel, and the strangers that came out of the land of Israel, and that dwelt in Judah, rejoiced. So there was great joy in Jerusalem: for since the time of Solomon the son of David king of Israel there was not the like in Jerusalem. Acts 2:42, 46-47. And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.... And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, Praising God, and having favor with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

[1143] Psalm 36:10. O continue your lovingkindness unto them that know thee; and your righteousness to the upright in heart. Song of Solomon 3:4. It was but a little that I passed from them, but I found him whom my soul loves: I held him, and would not let him go, until I had brought him into my mother's house, and into the chamber of her that conceived me. 1 Chronicles 29:18. O LORD God of Abraham, Isaac, and of Israel, our fathers, keep this for ever in the imagination of the thoughts of the heart of your people, and prepare their heart unto thee.

[1444] 1 Corinthians 10:3-5, 12. And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness.... Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.

[1145] Psalm 50:14. Offer unto God thanksgiving; and pay your vows unto the most High.

[1146] 1 Corinthians 11:25-26. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me. For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come. Acts 2:42, 46. And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.... And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart.

[1147] Ecclesiastes 5:1-6. Keep your foot when you go to the house of God, and be more ready to hear, than to give the sacrifice of fools: for they consider not that they do evil. Be not rash with your mouth, and let not your heart be heavy to utter any thing before God: for God is in heaven, and you upon earth: therefore let your words be few. For a dream cometh through the multitude of business; and a fool's voice is known by multitude of words. When you vowest a vow unto God, defer not to pay it; for he has no pleasure in fools: pay that which you have vowed. Better is it that you shouldest not vow, than that you shouldest vow and not pay. Suffer not your mouth to cause your flesh to sin; neither say you before the angel, that it was an error: wherefore should God be angry at your voice, and destroy the work of your hands? Psalm 139:23-24. Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

[1148] Psalm 123:1-2. Unto you lift I up my eyes, O you that dwellest in the heavens. Behold, as the eyes of servants look unto the hand of their masters, and as the eyes of a maiden unto the hand of her mistress; so our eyes wait upon the LORD our God, until that he have mercy upon us. Psalm 42:5, 8. Why art you cast down, O my soul? and why art you disquieted in me? hope you in God: for I shall yet praise him for the help of his countenance.... Yet the LORD will command his lovingkindness in the daytime, and in the night his song shall be with me, and my

prayer unto the God of my life. Psalm 43:3-5. O send out your light and your truth: let them lead me; let them bring me unto your holy hill, and to your tabernacles. Then will I go unto the altar of God, unto God my exceeding joy: yea, upon the harp will I praise you, O God my God. Why art you cast down, O my soul? and why art you disquieted within me? hope in God: for I shall yet praise him, who is the health of my countenance, and my God.

[1149] 2 Chronicles 30:18-19. For a multitude of the people, even many of Ephraim, and Manasseh, Issachar, and Zebulun, had not cleansed themselves, yet did they eat the passover otherwise than it was written. But Hezekiah prayed for them, saying, The good LORD pardon every one That prepareth his heart to seek God, the LORD God of his fathers, though he be not cleansed according to the purification of the sanctuary.

[1150] 2 Corinthians 7:11. For behold this selfsame thing, that you sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things you have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter. 1 Chronicles 15:12-14. And said unto them, you are the chief of the fathers of the Levites: sanctify yourselves, both you and your brethren, that you may bring up the ark of the LORD God of Israel unto the place that I have prepared for it. For because you did it not at the first, the LORD our God made a breach upon us, for that we sought him not after the due order. So the priests and the Levites sanctified themselves to bring up the ark of the LORD God of Israel.

Q. 176. In what do the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper agree?

A. The sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper agree, in that the author of both is God;[1151] the spiritual part of both is Christ and his benefits;[1152] both are seals of the same covenant,[1153] are to be dispensed by ministers of the gospel, and by none other;[1154] and to be continued in the church of Christ until his second coming.[1155]

[1151] Matthew 28:19. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. 1 Corinthians 11:23. For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread.

[1152] Romans 6:3-4. Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 1 Corinthians 10:16. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

[1153] Romans 4:11. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also. Compared with Colossians 2:12. Buried with him in baptism, in which also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him from the dead. Matthew 26:27-28. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink you all of it; For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

[1154] John 1:33. And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom you shall see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost. Matthew 28:19. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. 1 Corinthians 11:23. For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread. 1 Corinthians 4:1. Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. Hebrews 5:4. And no man taketh this honor unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.

[1155] Matthew 28:19-20. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen. 1 Corinthians 11:26. For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come.

**Q. 177. In what do the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper differ?**

*A. The sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper differ, in that baptism is to be administered but once, with water, to be a sign and seal of our regeneration and ingrafting into Christ,[1156] and that even to infants;[1157] whereas the Lord's supper is to be administered often, in the elements of bread and wine, to represent and exhibit Christ as spiritual nourishment to the soul,[1158] and to confirm our continuance and growth in him,[1159] and that only to such as are of years and ability to examine themselves.[1160]*

[1156] Matthew 3:11. I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire. Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of 145 regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost. Galatians 3:27. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

[1157] Genesis 17:7, 9. And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto you, and to your seed after thee.... And God said unto Abraham, You shall keep my covenant therefore, thou, and your seed after you in their generations. Acts 2:38-39. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call. 1 Corinthians 7:14. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy.

[1158] 1 Corinthians 11:23-26. For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me. For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come.

[1159] 1 Corinthians 10:16. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

[1160] 1 Corinthians 11:28-29. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unorthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

## **Prayer**

**Q. 178. What is prayer?**

*A. Prayer is an offering up of our desires unto God,[1161] in the name of Christ,[1162] by the help of his Spirit;[1163] with confession of our sins,[1164] and thankful acknowledgment of his mercies.[1165]*

[1161] Psalm 10:17. LORD, you have heard the desire of the humble: you will prepare their heart, you will cause your ear to hear. Psalm 62:8. Trust in him at all times; you people, pour out your heart before him: God is a refuge for us. Selah. Matthew 7:7-8. Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

[1162] John 16:23. And in that day you shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatever you shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you.

[1163] Romans 8:26. Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

[1164] Psalm 32:5-6. I acknowledged my sin unto you, and my iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and you forgave the iniquity of my sin. Selah. For this shall every one that is godly pray unto you in a time when you may be found: surely in the floods of great waters they shall not come nigh unto him. 1 John 1:9. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. See Daniel 9:4-19.

[1165] Philippians 4:6. Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. Psalm 103:1-5. Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless his holy name. Bless the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits: Who forgiveth all your iniquities; who healeth all your diseases; Who redeemeth your life from destruction; who crowneth you with lovingkindness and tender mercies; Who satisfieth your mouth with good things; so that your youth is renewed like the eagle's. See Psalm 136.

#### **Q. 179. Are we to pray unto God only?**

*A. God only being able to search the hearts,[1166] hear the requests,[1167] pardon the sins,[1168] and fulfill the desires of all;[1169] and only to be believed in,[1170] and worshipped with religious worship;[1171] prayer, which is a special part of it,[1172] is to be made by all to him alone,[1173] and to none other.[1174]*

[1166] 1 Kings 8:39. Then hear you in heaven your dwelling place, and forgive, and do, and give to every man according to his ways, whose heart you know; (for thou, even you only, know the hearts of all the children of men;) Acts 1:24. And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, which know the hearts of all men, show whether of these two you have chosen. Romans 8:27. And he that searches the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God.

[1167] Psalm 65:2. O you that hearest prayer, unto you shall all flesh come. [1168] Micah 7:18. Who is a God like unto you, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth in mercy.

[1169] Psalm 145:18. The LORD is nigh unto all them that call upon him, to all that call upon him in truth.

[1170] Romans 10:14. How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

[1171] Matthew 4:10. Then says Jesus unto him, Get you hence, Satan: for it is written, You shall worship the Lord your God, and him only shall you serve.

[1172] 1 Corinthians 1:2. Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours.

[1173] Isaiah 45:22. Look unto me, and be you saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else. Matthew 6:9. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, May your name be holy. Psalm 50:15. And call upon me in the day of trouble: I will deliver you, and you shall glorify me.

[1174] Isaiah 43:11. I, even I, am the LORD; and beside me there is no savior. Isaiah 46:9. Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me (see entire chapter).

#### **Q. 180. What is it to pray in the name of Christ?**

*A. To pray in the name of Christ is, in obedience to his command, and in confidence on his promises, to ask mercy for his sake;[1175] not by bare mentioning of his name,[1176] but by drawing our encouragement to pray, and our boldness, strength, and hope of acceptance in prayer, from Christ and his mediation.[1177]*

[1175] John 14:13-14. And whatever you shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If you shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. John 16:24. Hitherto have you asked nothing in my name: ask, and you shall receive, that your joy may be full. Daniel 9:17. Now therefore, O our God, hear the prayer of your servant, and his supplications, and cause your face to shine upon your sanctuary that is desolate, for the Lord's sake.

[1176] Matthew 7:21. Not every one that says unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

[1177] Hebrews 4:14-16. Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin. Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need. 1 John 5:13-15. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may believe on the name of the Son of God. And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: And if we know that he hear us, whatever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

#### **Q. 181. Why are we to pray in the name of Christ?**

*A. The sinfulness of man, and his distance from God by reason of it, being so great, as that we can have no access into his presence without a mediator;[1178] and there being none in heaven or earth appointed to, or fit for, that glorious work but Christ alone,[1179] we are to pray in no other name but his only.[1180]*

[1178] John 14:6. Jesus says unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. Isaiah 59:2. But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear. Ephesians 3:12. In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.

[1179] John 6:27. Labor not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him has God the Father sealed. Hebrews 7:25-27. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens; Who

needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself. 1 Timothy 2:5. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.

[1180] Colossians 3:17. And whatever you do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him. Hebrews 13:15. By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to his name.

#### **Q. 182. How does the Spirit help us to pray?**

*A. We not knowing what to pray for as we ought, the Spirit helpeth our infirmities, by enabling us to understand both for whom, and what, and how prayer is to be made; and by working and quickening in our hearts (although not in all persons, nor at all times, in the same measure) those apprehensions, affections, and graces which are requisite for the right performance of that duty.[1181]*

[1181] Romans 8:26-27. Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And he that searches the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God. Psalm 10:17. LORD, you have heard the desire of the humble: you will prepare their heart, you will cause your ear to hear. Zechariah 12:10. And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.

#### **Q. 183. For whom are we to pray?**

*A. We are to pray for the whole church of Christ upon earth;[1182] for magistrates,[1183] and ministers;[1184] for ourselves,[1185] our brethren,[1186] yea, our enemies;[1187] and for all sorts of men living,[1188] or that shall live hereafter;[1189] but not for the dead,[1190] nor for those that are known to have sinned the sin unto death.[1191]*

[1182] Ephesians 6:18. Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints. Psalm 28:9. Save your people, and bless your inheritance: feed them also, and lift them up for ever.

[1183] 1 Timothy 2:1-2. I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

[1184] Colossians 4:3. Withal praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds.

[1185] Genesis 32:11. Deliver me, I pray you, from the hand of my brother, from the hand of Esau: for I fear him, lest he will come and smite me, and the mother with the children.

[1186] James 5:16. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that you may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

[1187] Matthew 5:44. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you.

[1188] 1 Timothy 2:1-2. I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

[1189] John 17:20. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word. 2 Samuel 7:29. Therefore now let it please you to bless the house of your servant, that it may continue for ever before thee: for thou, O Lord GOD, have spoken it: and with your blessing let the house of your servant be blessed for ever.

[1190] 2 Samuel 12:21-23. Then said his servants unto him, What thing is this that you have done? you didst fast and weep for the child, while it was alive; but when the child was dead, you didst rise and eat bread. And he said, While the child was yet alive, I fasted and wept: for I said, Who can tell whether GOD will be gracious to me, that the child may live? But now he is dead, wherefore should I fast? can I bring him back again? I shall go to him, but he shall not return to me.

[1191] 1 John 5:16. If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.

#### **Q. 184. For what things are we to pray?**

A. *We are to pray for all things tending to the glory of God,[1192] the welfare of the church,[1193] our own[1194] or others, good;[1195] but not for anything that is unlawful.[1196]*

[1192] Matthew 6:9. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, May your name be holy.

[1193] Psalm 51:18. Do good in your good pleasure unto Zion: build you the walls of Jerusalem. Psalm 122:6. Pray for the peace of Jerusalem: they shall prosper that love thee.

[1194] Matthew 7:11. If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

[1195] Psalm 125:4. Do good, O LORD, unto those that be good, and to them that are upright in their hearts.

[1196] 1 John 5:14. And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us.

#### **Q. 185. How are we to pray?**

A. *We are to pray with an awful apprehension of the majesty of God,[1197] and deep sense of our own unworthiness,[1198] necessities,[1199] and sins;[1200] with penitent,[1201] thankful,[1202] and enlarged hearts;[1203] with understanding,[1204] faith,[1205] sincerity,[1206] fervency,[1207] love,[1208] and perseverance,[1209] waiting upon him,[1210] with humble submission to his will.[1211]*

[1197] Psalm 33:8. Let all the earth fear the LORD: let all the inhabitants of the world stand in awe of him. Psalm 95:6. O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the LORD our maker. Psalm 145:5. I will speak of the glorious honor of your majesty, and of your wondrous works.

[1198] Genesis 18:27. And Abraham answered and said, Behold now, I have taken upon me to speak unto the Lord, which am but dust and ashes. Genesis 32:10. I am not worthy of the least of all the mercies, and of all the truth, which you have showed unto your servant; for with my staff I passed over this Jordan; and now I am become two bands.

[1199] Luke 15:17-19. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before you, And am no more worthy to be called your son: make me as one of your hired servants.

[1200] Luke 18:13-14. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

[1201] Psalm 51:17. The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, you will not despise.

[1202] Philippians 4:6. Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.

[1203] 1 Samuel 1:15. And Hannah answered and said, No, my lord, I am a woman of a sorrowful spirit: I have drunk neither wine nor strong drink, but have poured out my soul before the LORD. 1 Samuel 2:1. And Hannah prayed, and said, My heart rejoices in the LORD, my horn is exalted in the LORD: my mouth is enlarged over my enemies; because I rejoice in your salvation.

[1204] 1 Corinthians 14:15. What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.

[1205] Mark 11:24. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever you desire, when you pray, believe that you receive them, and you shall have them. James 1:6. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed.

[1206] Psalm 145:18. The LORD is nigh unto all them that call upon him, to all that call upon him in truth. Psalm 17:1. Hear the right, O LORD, attend unto my cry, give ear unto my prayer, that goeth not out of feigned lips. [1207] James 5:16. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that you may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

[1208] Psalm 116:1-2. I love the LORD, because he has heard my voice and my supplications. Because he has inclined his ear unto me, therefore will I call upon him as long as I live. Romans 15:30. Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that you strive together with me in your prayers to God for me.

[1209] Ephesians 6:18. Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints.

[1210] Micah 7:7. Therefore I will look unto the LORD; I will wait for the God of my salvation: my God will hear me.

[1211] Matthew 26:39. And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as you will.

#### **Q. 186. What rule has God given for our direction in the duty of prayer?**

*A. The whole Word of God is of use to direct us in the duty of prayer;[1212] but the special rule of direction is that form of prayer which our Savior Christ taught his disciples, commonly called The Lord's Prayer.[1213]*

[1212] 1 John 5:14. And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us.

[1213] Matthew 6:9-13. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, May your name be holy. your kingdom come. your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For your is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. Luke 11:2-4. And he said unto them, When you pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, May your name be holy. your kingdom come. your will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. Give us day by day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.

**Q. 187. How is the Lord's Prayer to be used?**

A. *The Lord's Prayer is not only for direction, as a pattern, according to which we are to make other prayers; but may also be used as a prayer, so that it is done with understanding, faith, reverence, and other graces necessary to the right performance of the duty of prayer.[1214]*

[1214] Matthew 6:9. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, May your name be holy. Luke 11:2. And he said unto them, When you pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, May your name be holy. your kingdom come. your will be done, as in heaven, so in earth.

**Q. 188. Of how many parts does the Lord's Prayer consist?**

A. *The Lord's Prayer consists of three parts; a preface, petitions, and a conclusion.*

**Q. 189. What does the preface of the Lord's Prayer teach us?**

A. *The preface of the Lord's Prayer (contained in these words, Our Father which art in heaven,[1215]) teaches us, when we pray, to draw near to God with confidence of his fatherly goodness, and our interest in it,[1216] with reverence, and all other childlike dispositions,[1217] heavenly affections,[1218] and due apprehensions of his sovereign power, majesty, and gracious condescension:[1219] as also, to pray with and for others.[1220]*

[1215] Matthew 6:9. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, May your name be holy. Cf. Luke 11:2.

[1216] Psalm 103:13. Like as a father pitith his children, so the LORD pitith them that fear him. Luke 11:13. If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him? Romans 8:15. For you have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but you have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

[1217] Isaiah 64:9. Be not wroth very sore, O LORD, neither remember iniquity for ever: behold, see, we beseech you, we are all your people.

[1218] Colossians 3:1-2. If you then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. Psalm 123:1. Unto you lift I up my eyes, O you that dwellest in the heavens. Lamentations 3:41. Let us lift up our heart with our hands unto God in the heavens.

[1219] Isaiah 63:15-16. Look down from heaven, and behold from the habitation of your holiness and of your glory: where is your zeal and your strength, the sounding of your bowels and of your mercies toward me? are they restrained? Doubtless you art our father, though Abraham be ignorant of us, and Israel acknowledge us not: thou, O LORD, art our father, our redeemer; your name is from everlasting. Nehemiah 1:4-6. And it came to pass, when I heard these words, that I sat down and wept, and mourned certain days, and fasted, and prayed before the God of heaven,

And said, I beseech you, O LORD God of heaven, the great and terrible God, that keepeth covenant and mercy for them that love him and observe his commandments: Let your ear now be attentive, and your eyes open, that you may hear the prayer of your servant, which I pray before you now, day and night, for the children of Israel your servants, and confess the sins of the children of Israel, which we have sinned against thee: both I and my father's house have sinned. See Psalm 113:4-6.

[1220] Acts 12:5. Peter therefore was kept in prison: but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him. 1 Timothy 2:1-2. I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. Ephesians 6:18. Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints.

**Q. 190. What do we pray for in the first petition?**

*A. In the first petition, (which is, May your name be holy,[1221]) acknowledging the utter inability and indisposition that is in ourselves and all men to honor God aright,[1222] we pray, that God would by his grace enable and incline us and others to know, to acknowledge, and to highly esteem him,[1223] his titles,[1224] attributes,[1225] ordinances, Word,[1226] works, and whatever he is pleased to make himself known by;[1227] and to glorify him in thought, word,[1228] and deed:[1229] that he would prevent and remove atheism,[1230] ignorance,[1231] idolatry,[1232] profaneness,[1233] and whatever is dishonorable to him;[1234] and, by his overruling providence, direct and dispose of all things to his own glory.[1235]*

[1221] Matthew 6:9. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, May your name be holy. Cf. Luke 11:2.

[1222] 2 Corinthians 3:5. Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God. Psalm 51:15. O Lord, open you my lips; and my mouth shall show forth your praise.

[1223] Psalm 67:2-3. That your way may be known upon earth, your saving health among all nations. Let the people praise you, O God; let all the people praise thee. Psalm 99:1-3. The LORD reigns; let the people tremble: he sitteth between the cherubims; let the earth be moved. The LORD is great in Zion; and he is high above all the people. Let them praise your great and terrible name; for it is holy.

[1224] Psalm 83:18. That men may know that thou, whose name alone is JEHOVAH, art the most high over all the earth.

[1225] Psalm 86:10-13, 15. For you art great, and doest wondrous things: you art God alone. Teach me your way, O LORD; I will walk in your truth: unite my heart to fear your name. I will praise you, O Lord my God, with all my heart: and I will glorify your name for evermore. For great is your mercy toward me: and you have delivered my soul from the lowest hell.... But thou, O Lord, art a God full of compassion, and gracious, longsuffering, and plenteous in mercy and truth.

[1226] 2 Thessalonians 3:1. Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified, even as it is with you. Psalm 147:19-20. He sheweth his word unto Jacob, his statutes and his judgments unto Israel. He has not dealt so with any nation: and as for his judgments, they have not known them. Praise you the LORD. Psalm 138:1-3. I will praise you with my whole heart: before the gods will I sing praise unto thee. I will worship toward your holy temple, and praise your name for your lovingkindness and for your truth: for you have magnified your word above all your name. In the day when I cried you answeredst me, and strengthenedst me with strength in my soul. 2 Corinthians 2:14-15. Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and makes manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every

place. For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish.

[1227] Psalm 145. I will extol you, my God, O king, etc. Psalm 8. O LORD our Lord, how excellent is your name in all the earth, etc.

[1228] Psalm 103:1. Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless his holy name. Psalm 19:14. Let the words of my mouth, and the meditation of my heart, be acceptable in your sight, O LORD, my strength, and my redeemer.

[1229] Philippians 1:9, 11. And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment.... Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God. Psalm 100:3-4. Know you that the LORD he is God: it is he that has made us, and not we ourselves; we are his people, and the sheep of his pasture. Enter into his gates with thanksgiving, and into his courts with praise: be thankful unto him, and bless his name.

[1230] Psalm 67:1-4. God be merciful unto us, and bless us; and cause his face to shine upon us; Selah. That your way may be known upon earth, your saving health among all nations. Let the people praise you, O God; let all the people praise thee. O let the nations be glad and sing for joy: for you shall judge the people righteously, and govern the nations upon earth. Selah.

[1231] Ephesians 1:17-18. That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints.

[1232] Psalm 97:7. Confounded be all they that serve graven images, that boast themselves of idols: worship him, all you gods. [1233] Psalm 74:18, 22-23. Remember this, that the enemy has reproached, O LORD, and that the foolish people have blasphemed your name.... Arise, O God, plead your own cause: remember how the foolish man reproacheth you daily. Forget not the voice of your enemies: the tumult of those that rise up against you increaseth continually.

[1234] 2 Kings 19:15-16. And Hezekiah prayed before the LORD, and said, O LORD God of Israel, which dwellest between the cherubims, you art the God, even you alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth; you have made heaven and earth. LORD, bow down your ear, and hear: open, LORD, your eyes, and see: and hear the words of Sennacherib, which has sent him to reproach the living God.

[1235] 2 Chronicles 20:6. And said, O LORD God of our fathers, art not you God in heaven? and rulest not you over all the kingdoms of the heathen? and in your hand is there not power and might, so that none is able to withstand thee? See verses 10-12. Romans 11:33-36. O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out! For who has known the mind of the Lord? or who has been his counsellor? Or who has first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again? For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen. Revelation 4:11. You art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power: for you have created all things, and for your pleasure they are and were created. See Psalms 83; 140:4, 8

#### **Q. 191. What do we pray for in the second petition?**

A. *In the second petition, (which is, your kingdom come,[1236]) acknowledging ourselves and all mankind to be by nature under the dominion of sin and Satan,[1237] we pray, that the kingdom of sin and Satan may be destroyed,[1238] the gospel propagated throughout the world,[1239] the Jews called,[1240] the fullness of the Gentiles brought in;[1241] the church furnished with all gospel-officers and ordinances,[1242] purged from corruption,[1243] countenanced and*

*maintained by the civil magistrate:[1244] that the ordinances of Christ may be purely dispensed, and made effectual to the converting of those that are yet in their sins, and the confirming, comforting, and building up of those that are already converted:[1245] that Christ would rule in our hearts here,[1246] and hasten the time of his second coming, and our reigning with him forever:[1247] and that he would be pleased so to exercise the kingdom of his power in all the world, as may be most conducive to these ends.[1248]*

[1236] Matthew 6:10. Your kingdom come. Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Cf. Luke 11:2.

[1237] Ephesians 2:2-3. In which in time past you walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

[1238] Psalm 68:1. Let God arise, let his enemies be scattered: let them also that hate him flee before him.... You have ascended on high, you have led captivity captive: you have received gifts for men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell among them. Revelation 12:10-11. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

[1239] Psalm 67:1-2. God be merciful unto us, and bless us; and cause his face to shine upon us; Selah. That your way may be known upon earth, your saving health among all nations. 2 Thessalonians 3:1. Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified, even as it is with you.

[1240] Romans 10:1. Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved. [1241] John 17:9, 20. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which you have given me; for they are your.... Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word. Romans 11:25-26. For I would not, brethren, that you should be ignorant of this mystery, lest you should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob. See Psalm 67.

[1242] Matthew 9:38. Pray you therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth laborers into his harvest. 2 Thessalonians 3:1. Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified, even as it is with you.

[1243] Malachi 1:11. For from the rising of the sun even unto the going down of the same my name shall be great among the Gentiles; and in every place incense shall be offered unto my name, and a pure offering: for my name shall be great among the heathen, says the LORD of hosts. Zephaniah 3:9. For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent.

[1244] 1 Timothy 2:1-2. I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. Isaiah 49:23. And kings shall be your nursing fathers, and their queens your nursing mothers: they shall bow down to you with their face toward the earth, and lick up the dust of your feet; and you shall know that I am the LORD: for they shall not be ashamed that wait for me.

[1245] Acts 4:29-30. And now, Lord, behold their threatenings: and grant unto your servants, that with all boldness they may speak your word, By stretching forth your hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of your holy child Jesus. Ephesians 6:18-20. Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel, For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that in it I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak. Romans 15:29-30, 32. And I am sure that, when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ. Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that you strive together with me in your prayers to God for me.... That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed. 2 Thessalonians 1:11. Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of faith with power. 2 Thessalonians 2:16-17. Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, even our Father, which has loved us, and has given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace, Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

[1246] Ephesians 3:14-20. For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that you might be filled with all the fulness of God. Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us. Colossians 3:15. And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also you are called in one body; and be you thankful.

[1247] Revelation 22:20. He which testifieth these things says, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. 2 Timothy 2:12. If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us. 2 Peter 3:12. Looking for and having unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?

[1248] Isaiah 64:1-2. Oh that you wouldest rend the heavens, that you wouldest come down, that the mountains might flow down at your presence. As when the melting fire burneth, the fire causeth the waters to boil, to make your name known to your adversaries, that the nations may tremble at your presence! Revelation 4:8-11. And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come. And when those beasts give glory and honor and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever, The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, You art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power: for you have created all things, and for your pleasure they are and were created.

#### Q. 192. What do we pray for in the third petition?

A. *In the third petition, (which is, your will be done in earth as it is in heaven,[1249]) acknowledging, that by nature we and all men are not only utterly unable and unwilling to know and do the will of God,[1250] but prone to rebel against his Word,[1251] to repine and murmur against his providence,[1252] and wholly inclined to do the will of the flesh, and of the devil:[1253] we pray, that God would by his Spirit take away from ourselves and others all blindness,[1254] weakness,[1255] indisposedness,[1256] and perverseness of heart;[1257] and by his grace make us able and willing to know, do, and submit to his will in all things,[1258] with the same humility,[1259] cheerfulness,[1260] faithfulness,[1261] diligence,[1262] zeal,[1263] sincerity,[1264] and constancy,[1265] that the angels do in heaven.[1266]*

[1249] Matthew 6:10. your kingdom come. your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Cf. Luke 11:2.

[1250] Romans 7:18. For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. Job 21:14. Therefore they say unto God, Depart from us; for we desire not the knowledge of your ways. 1 Corinthians 2:14. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

[1251] Romans 8:7. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

[1252] Exodus 17:7. And he called the name of the place Massah, and Meribah, because of the chiding of the children of Israel, and because they tempted the LORD, saying, Is the LORD among us, or not? Numbers 14:2. And all the children of Israel murmured against Moses and against Aaron: and the whole congregation said unto them, Would God that we had died in the land of Egypt! or would God we had died in this wilderness!

[1253] Ephesians 2:2. In which in time past you walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.

[1254] Ephesians 1:17-18. That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints.

[1255] Ephesians 3:16. That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man.

[1256] Matthew 26:40-41. And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and says unto Peter, What, could you not watch with me one hour? Watch and pray, that you enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

[1257] Jeremiah 31:18-19. I have surely heard Ephraim bemoaning himself thus; You have chasteised me, and I was chasteised, as a bullock unaccustomed to the yoke: turn you me, and I shall be turned; for you art the LORD my God. Surely after that I was turned, I repented; and after that I was instructed, I smote upon my thigh: I was ashamed, yea, even confounded, because I did bear the reproach of my youth.

[1258] Psalm 19:14. Let the words of my mouth, and the meditation of my heart, be acceptable in your sight, O LORD, my strength, and my redeemer. Acts 21:14. And when he would not be persuaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done. See Psalm 119; 1 Thessalonians 5:23; Hebrews 13:20-21.

[1259] Micah 6:8. He has showed you, O man, what is good; and what does the LORD require of you, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with your God?

[1260] Psalm 100:2. Serve the LORD with gladness: come before his presence with singing. Job 1:21. And said, Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither: the LORD gave, and the LORD has taken away; blessed be the name of the LORD. 2 Samuel 15:25-26. And the king said unto Zadok, Carry back the ark of God into the city: if I shall find favor in the eyes of the LORD, he will bring me again, and show me both it, and his habitation: But if he thus say, I have no delight in thee; behold, here am I, let him do to me as seemeth good unto him.

[1261] Isaiah 38:3. And said, Remember now, O LORD, I beseech you, how I have walked before you in truth and with a perfect heart, and have done that which is good in your sight. And Hezekiah wept sore.

[1262] Psalm 119:4-5. You have commanded us to keep your precepts diligently. O that my ways were directed to keep your statutes!

[1263] Psalm 69:9. For the zeal of your house has eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached you are fallen upon me. John 2:17. And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of your house has eaten me up. Romans 12:11. Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord.

[1264] Joshua 24:14. Now therefore fear the LORD, and serve him in sincerity and in truth: and put away the gods which your fathers served on the other side of the flood, and in Egypt; and serve you the LORD. Psalm 119:80. Let my heart be sound in your statutes; that I be not ashamed. 1 Corinthians 5:8. Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth. See 2 Corinthians 1:12.

[1265] Psalm 119:112. I have inclined my heart to perform your statutes alway, even unto the end.

[1266] Isaiah 6:2-3. Above it stood the seraphims: each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly. And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory. Psalm 103:20-21. Bless the LORD, you his angels, that excel in strength, that do his commandments, hearkening unto the voice of his word. Bless you the LORD, all you his hosts; you ministers of his, that do his pleasure. Matthew 18:10. Take heed that you despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

#### **Q. 193. What do we pray for in the fourth petition?**

*A. In the fourth petition, (which is, Give us this day our daily bread,[1267]) acknowledging, that in Adam, and by our own sin, we have forfeited our right to all the outward blessings of this life, and deserve to be wholly deprived of them by God, and to have them cursed to us in their use;[1268] and that of themselves they are not able to sustain us,[1269] nor are we to merit,[1270] or by our own industry to procure them;[1271] but prone to desire,[1272] get,[1273] and use them unlawfully:[1274] we pray for ourselves and others, that both they and we, waiting upon the providence of God from day to day in the use of lawful means, may, of his free gift, and what to his fatherly wisdom shall seem best, enjoy a competent portion of them;[1275] and have these continued and blessed to us in our holy and comfortable use of them,[1276] and be content in them;[1277] and be kept from all things that are contrary to our temporal support and comfort.[1278]*

[1267] Matthew 6:11. Give us this day our daily bread. Cf. Luke 11:3.

[1268] Genesis 2:17. But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eatest of it you shall surely die. Genesis 3:17. And unto Adam he said, Because you have hearkened unto the voice of your wife, and have eaten of the tree, of which I commanded you, saying, You shall not eat of it: cursed is the ground for your sake; in sorrow shall you eat of it all the days of your life. Romans 8:20-22. For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who has subjected the same in hope, Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. Jeremiah 5:25. Your iniquities have turned away these things, and your sins have

withholden good things from you. Deuteronomy 28:15-17. But it shall come to pass, if you will not hearken unto the voice of the LORD your God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command you this day; that all these curses shall come upon you, and overtake thee: Cursed shall you be in the city, and cursed shall you be in the field. Cursed shall be your basket and your store, etc.

[1269] Deuteronomy 8:3. And he humbled you, and suffered you to hunger, and fed you with manna, which you knewest not, neither did your fathers know; that he might make you know that man does not live by bread only, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of the LORD does man live.

[1270] Genesis 32:10. I am not worthy of the least of all the mercies, and of all the truth, which you have showed unto your servant; for with my staff I passed over this Jordan; and now I am become two bands.

[1271] Deuteronomy 8:17-18. And you say in your heart, My power and the might of my hand has gotten me this wealth. But you shall remember the LORD your God: for it is he that giveth you power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto your fathers, as it is this day.

[1272] Jeremiah 6:13. For from the least of them even unto the greatest of them every one is given to covetousness; and from the prophet even unto the priest every one dealeth falsely. Mark 7:21-22. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness.

[1273] Hosea 12:7. He is a merchant, the balances of deceit are in his hand: he loves to oppress.

[1274] James 4:3. you ask, and receive not, because you ask amiss, that you may consume it upon your lusts.

[1275] Genesis 43:12-14. And take double money in your hand; and the money that was brought again in the mouth of your sacks, carry it again in your hand; peradventure it was an oversight: Take also your brother, and arise, go again unto the man: And God Almighty give you mercy before the man, that he may send away your other brother, and Benjamin. If I be bereaved of my children, I am bereaved. Genesis 28:20. And Jacob vowed a vow, saying, If God will be with me, and will keep me in this way that I go, and will give me bread to eat, and raiment to put on. Ephesians 4:28. Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labor, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. 2 Thessalonians 3:11-12. For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies. Now them that are such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread. Philippians 4:6. Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.

[1276] 1 Timothy 4:3-5. Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God has created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it is received with thanksgiving: For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

[1277] 1 Timothy 6:6-8. But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.

[1278] Proverbs 30:8-9. Remove far from me vanity and lies: give me neither poverty nor riches; feed me with food convenient for me: Lest I be full, and deny you, and say, Who is the LORD? or lest I be poor, and steal, and take the name of my God in vain.

**Q. 194. What do we pray for in the fifth petition?**

*A. In the fifth petition, (which is, Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors,[1279]) acknowledging, that we and all others are guilty both of original and actual sin, and thereby become debtors to the justice of God; and that neither we, nor any other creature, can make the least satisfaction for that debt:[1280] we pray for ourselves and others, that God of his free grace would, through the obedience and satisfaction of Christ, understood and applied by faith, acquit us from both the guilt and punishment of sin,[1281] accept us in his Beloved;[1282] continue his favor and grace to us,[1283] pardon our daily failings,[1284] and fill us with peace and joy, in giving us more and more assurance of forgiveness daily;[1285] which we are rather emboldened to ask for, and encouraged to expect, when we have this testimony in ourselves, that we from the heart forgive others their offenses.[1286]*

[1279] Matthew 6:12. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. Cf. Luke 11:4.

[1280] Romans 3:9-22. What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin; As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.... Now we know that what things soever the law says, it says to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God, etc. Matthew 18:24-25. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. Psalm 130:3-4. If thou, LORD, shouldest mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand? But there is forgiveness with you, that you may be feared.

[1281] Romans 3:24-26. Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believes in Jesus. Hebrews 9:22. And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

[1282] Ephesians 1:6-7. To the praise of the glory of his grace, in which he has made us accepted in the beloved. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace.

[1283] 2 Peter 1:2. Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord.

[1284] Hosea 14:2. Take with you words, and turn to the LORD: say unto him, Take away all iniquity, and receive us graciously: so will we render the calves of our lips. Jeremiah 14:7. O LORD, though our iniquities testify against us, do you it for your name's sake: for our backslidings are many; we have sinned against thee. 1 John 1:9. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. See Daniel 9:17-19.

[1285] Romans 15:13. Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that you may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost. Psalm 51:7-10, 12. Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean: wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow. Make me to hear joy and gladness; that the bones which you have broken may rejoice. Hide your face from my sins, and blot out all my iniquities. Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.... Restore unto me the joy of your salvation; and uphold me with your free spirit.

[1286] Luke 11:4. And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil. Matthew 6:14-15. For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if you forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. Ephesians 4:32. And be you kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake has forgiven you. Colossians 3:13. Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye. See Matthew 18:21-35.

#### **Q. 195. What do we pray for in the sixth petition?**

*A. In the sixth petition, (which is, And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil,[1287]) acknowledging, that the most wise, righteous, and gracious God, for diverse holy and just ends, may so order things, that we may be assaulted, foiled, and for a time led captive by temptations;[1288] that Satan,[1289] the world,[1290] and the flesh, are ready powerfully to draw us aside, and ensnare us;[1291] and that we, even after the pardon of our sins, by reason of our corruption,[1292] weakness, and want of watchfulness,[1293] are not only subject to be tempted, and forward to expose ourselves to temptations,[1294] but also of ourselves unable and unwilling to resist them, to recover out of them, and to improve them;[1295] and worthy to be left under the power of them:[1296] we pray, that God would so overrule the world and all in it.*

[1297] subdue the flesh,[1298] and restrain Satan,[1299] order all things,[1300] bestow and bless all means of grace,[1301] and quicken us to watchfulness in the use of them, that we and all his people may by his providence be kept from being tempted to sin;[1302] or, if tempted, that by his Spirit we may be powerfully supported and enabled to stand in the hour of temptation;[1303] or when fallen, raised again and recovered out of it,[1304] and have a sanctified use and improvement of it:[1305] that our sanctification and salvation may be perfected,[1306] Satan trodden under our feet,[1307] and we fully freed from sin, temptation, and all evil, forever.[1308]

[1287] Matthew 6:13. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For your is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. Cf. Luke 11:4.

[1288] 2 Chronicles 32:31. Howbeit in the business of the ambassadors of the princes of Babylon, who sent unto him to inquire of the wonder that was done in the land, God left him, to try him, that he might know all that was in his heart.

[1289] 1 Chronicles 21:1. And Satan stood up against Israel, and provoked David to number Israel.

[1290] Luke 21:34. And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. Mark 4:19. And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.

[1291] James 1:14. But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.

[1292] Galatians 5:17. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that you cannot do the things that you would.

[1293] Matthew 26:41. Watch and pray, that you enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

[1294] Matthew 26:69-72. Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, You also were with Jesus of Galilee. But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what you sayest. And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto

them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth. And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man. Galatians 2:11-14. But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision. And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation. But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest you the Gentiles to live as do the Jews? 2 Chronicles 18:3. And Ahab king of Israel said unto Jehoshaphat king of Judah, Will you go with me to Ramothgilead? And he answered him, I am as you art, and my people as your people; and we will be with you in the war. 2 Chronicles 19:2. And Jehu the son of Hanani the seer went out to meet him, and said to king Jehoshaphat, Shouldest you help the ungodly, and love them that hate the LORD? therefore is wrath upon you from before the LORD.

[1295] Romans 7:23-24. But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? 1 Chronicles 21:1-4. And Satan stood up against Israel, and provoked David to number Israel. And David said to Joab and to the rulers of the people, Go, number Israel from Beersheba even to Dan; and bring the number of them to me, that I may know it. And Joab answered, The LORD make his people an hundred times so many more as they be: but, my lord the king, are they not all my lord's servants? why then does my lord require this thing? why will he be a cause of trespass to Israel? Nevertheless the king's word prevailed against Joab. Wherefore Joab departed, and went throughout all Israel, and came to Jerusalem. 2 Chronicles 16:7-10. And at that time Hanani the seer came to Asa king of Judah, and said unto him, Because you have relied on the king of Syria, and not relied on the LORD your God, therefore is the host of the king of Syria escaped out of your hand. Were not the Ethiopians and the Lubims a huge host, with very many chariots and horsemen? yet, because you didst rely on the LORD, he delivered them into your hand. For the eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to show himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him. Herein you have done foolishly: therefore from henceforth you shall have wars. Then Asa was wroth with the seer, and put him in a prison house; for he was in a rage with him because of this thing. And Asa oppressed some of the people the same time.

[1296] Psalm 81:11-12. But my people would not hearken to my voice; and Israel would none of me. So I gave them up unto their own hearts' lust: and they walked in their own counsels.

[1297] John 17:15. I pray not that you shouldest take them out of the world, but that you shouldest keep them from the evil.

[1298] Psalm 51:10. Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me. Psalm 119:133. Order my steps in your word: and let not any iniquity have dominion over me.

[1299] 2 Corinthians 12:7-8. And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure. For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

[1300] 1 Corinthians 10:12-13. Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. There has no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that you are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that you may be able to bear it.

[1301] Hebrews 13:20-21. Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is wellpleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

[1302] Matthew 26:41. Watch and pray, that you enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. Psalm 19:13. Keep back your servant also from presumptuous sins; let them not have dominion over me: then shall I be upright, and I shall be innocent from the great transgression.

[1303] Ephesians 3:14-17. For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love. 1 Thessalonians 3:13. To the end he may stablish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints. Jude 24. Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy.

[1304] Psalm 51:12. Restore unto me the joy of your salvation; and uphold me with your free spirit.

[1305] 1 Peter 5:8-10. Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world. But the God of all grace, who has called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that you have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

[1306] 2 Corinthians 13:7, 9. Now I pray to God that you do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that you should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.... For we are glad, when we are weak, and you are strong: and this also we wish, even your perfection.

[1307] Romans 16:20. And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen. Luke 22:31-32. And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan has desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for you, that your faith fail not: and when you art converted, strengthen your brethren.

[1308] John 17:15. I pray not that you shouldest take them out of the world, but that you shouldest keep them from the evil. 1 Thessalonians 5:23. And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

#### **Q. 196. What does the conclusion of the Lord's Prayer teach us?**

*A. The conclusion of the Lord's Prayer, (which is, For your is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.[1309]) teaches us to enforce our petitions with arguments,[1310] which are to be taken, not from any worthiness in ourselves, or in any other creature, but from God;[1311] and with our prayers to join praises,[1312] ascribing eternal sovereignty to God alone, omnipotence, and glorious excellency;[1313] in regard to which, as he is able and willing to help us,[1314] so we by faith are emboldened to plead with him that he would,[1315] and quietly rely on him, that he will fulfil our requests.[1316] And, to testify this our desire and assurance, we say, Amen.[1317]*

[1309] Matthew 6:13. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For your is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen (found in some, but not all, Greek manuscripts).

[1310] Romans 15:30. Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that you strive together with me in your prayers to God for me.

[1311] Daniel 9:4, 7-9, 16-19. And I prayed unto the LORD my God, and made my confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God, keeping the covenant and mercy to them that love him, and to them that keep his commandments.... O Lord, righteousness belongeth unto you, but unto us confusion of faces, as at this day.... O Lord, to us belongeth confusion of face, to our kings, to our princes, and to our fathers, because we have sinned against thee. To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him.... O Lord, according to all your righteousness, I beseech you, let your anger and your fury be turned away from your city Jerusalem.... Now therefore, O our God, hear the prayer of your servant, and his supplications, and cause your face to shine upon your sanctuary that is desolate, for the Lord's sake. O my God, incline your ear, and hear; open your eyes, and behold our desolations, and the city which is called by your name: for we do not present our supplications before you for our righteousnesses, but for your great mercies. O Lord, hear; O Lord, forgive; O Lord, hearken and do; defer not, for your own sake, O my God: for your city and your people are called by your name.

[1312] Philippians 4:6. Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.

[1313] 1 Chronicles 29:10-13. Wherefore David blessed the LORD before all the congregation: and David said, Blessed be thou, LORD God of Israel our father, for ever and ever. Your, O LORD, is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all that is in the heaven and in the earth is your; your is the kingdom, O LORD, and you art exalted as head above all. Both riches and honor come of you, and you reign over all; and in your hand is power and might; and in your hand it is to make great, and to give strength unto all. Now therefore, our God, we thank you, and praise your glorious name. 1 Timothy 1:17. Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honor and glory for ever and ever. Amen. Revelation 5:11-13. And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands; Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honor, and glory, and blessing. And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honor, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

[1314] Ephesians 3:20-21. Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen. Luke 11:13. If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

[1315] 2 Chronicles 20:6, 11. And said, O LORD God of our fathers, art not you God in heaven? and rulest not you over all the kingdoms of the heathen? and in your hand is there not power and might, so that none is able to withstand thee?... Behold, I say, how they reward us, to come to cast us out of your possession, which you have given us to inherit.

[1316] 2 Chronicles 14:11. And Asa cried unto the LORD his God, and said, LORD, it is nothing with you to help, whether with many, or with them that have no power: help us, O LORD our God; for we rest on you, and in your name we go against this multitude. O LORD, you art our God; let not man prevail against thee.

[1317] 1 Corinthians 14:16. Else when you shall bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say Amen at your giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what you sayest? Revelation 22:20-21. He which testifieth these things says, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.